An Analysis of the Social Innovation Scaling Processes

in Selected Asian Countries

A Dissertation

Submitted to the University of Tsukuba

In Partial Fulfillment of the Requirements for the Degree of

Doctor of Philosophy in Social Sciences

Ken AOO

2018

Contents

List of Tables

List of Figures

Acknowledgements

First and foremost, I would like to thank all the friends and people who I had the privilege of working with together with in different places and projects, including in Vietnam, Uganda, the U.S., and Japan. The foundations of and the inspiration for my thesis research came from what I learned from all of you. Indeed, this paper would not exist without you.

Second, I am profoundly grateful to my colleagues at Okayama University for their kindness, support, and patience in accepting an inexperienced researcher / teacher like me.

Third, I would like to sincerely thank the members of my PhD Dissertation Review Committee. I was extremely lucky to have such brilliant and kind supervisors, and to have the opportunity to benefit from them. Thank you to Professor Tsujinaka for accepting me as his PhD student, and encouraging (and forcing) me to pursue a challenging question. I would also like to thank Professor Kaigo for providing me with critical comments and suggestions (with a sense of humor) to polish my dissertation, and Professor Ohtomo for guiding me on the basics of social sciences in a seminar room with only my good friend Anisa and myself (which will become a unforgettable memory), and for providing me with some hints as to the final concept and model. And of course, I wish to thank Professor Tsushiro for reminding me about crucial points regarding cultures and values, with kind encouragement. And last but not least, to Professor Akashi, for always taking such good care of me as the head of committee. I still remember when we sat over a coffee and (with a strange smile) you showed me a brochure about the Kokunichi Program - we have come a long way since then! I truly enjoyed my student days in Tsukuba. Discussion and help from colleagues such as Professor Leslie M. Tkach-Kawasaki, Dr. Huang Mei, Dr. Hiroyuki Tagawa, Dr. Tomoya Sagara, Dr. Takuya Hasegawa, Mr. Bakhrom Radjabov, and the staff at the Kokunichi Office made my life an easy and enjoyable one.

Next, I would like to thank the researchers and practitioners who are involved in social innovation and who have shared their rich knowledge and insights with me, including Professor Alex Nicholls at Said Business School of Oxford University, Professor Fergus Lyon, Middlesex University, Ms. Louise Pulford, Ms. Jordan Junge and Ms. Sojung Rim, Social Innovation Exchange (SIX), Dr. Christoph Kaletka and Dr. Dimitry Domanski, Dortmund Technical University, Professor Frances Westley, University

Chapter 1: Introduction

This thesis aims to provide an empirical analysis of social innovation (hereunder abbreviated as "SI")

processes in different Asian countries, with a special focus on both its causal mechanisms and how the

interactions of stakeholders from different sectors affect the "scaling" processes of SI initiatives. As an

introduction, this chapter first discusses the definition of SI, then examines why SI is becoming important

in both policy and academic arenas, why there are high hopes for it in both post-welfare and pre-welfare

state contexts, and next gives a brief overview of the development of SI-related policies and literature.

Finally, it presents the research design, including research questions, theoretical frameworks, and

methodology.

1.1 What is / Why Social Innovation?

1.1.1 What is Social Innovation?

Since the 1990s, "social innovation" has become a fashionable term for policy makers, businesses, civil

society, media, and academics in various regions to use. In part because it is largely a practice-driven

concept, different groups use the term in their own ways. For example, SI is often used in a sense

equivalent to charismatic social entrepreneurs and/or social ventures that use cutting-edge technology to

tackle various social issues.[1]

      Although SI is still a developing concept, there is a growing common understanding among

---

[1] For a few examples, the Asia Social Innovation Award invites social entrepreneurs who work on issues such as aging, environmental degradation, and poverty ("About the Award," Asia Social Innovation Award website: https://www.socialinnovationaward.asia/2017/about.html). The Horizon Prize for Social Innovation ("Horizon Prize Social Innovation in Europe," The European Commission website: http://ec.europa.eu/research/horizonprize/index.cfm?prize=social-innovation) and the Aspirin Social Innovation Award ("The Award: Aspirin Social Innovation Award" page, Bayer Foundation website: https://aspirin-social-awards.org/the-award) both present awards to people who bring about pioneering technologies related to social issues such as mobility and health (All retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

researchers working on SI theory, particularly in English-language literature. The details of the concept are dealt with in the literature review section (1.2.2) below, but for the purpose of practical use in the meantime, this study applies a two-fold definition as the working definition of SI, which is taken from recent scholarly works (Nicholls et al. 2015:2-5; Howaldt et al. 2016:27-28; Mulgan et al. 2007:8; TEPSIE 2014:14). First, SI is a new (by the very definition of the word "innovation") combination of products, services, or activities to meet a social need or to create social value.[2] Second, SI is also a process that changes existing cognition, values, behavior, capacity, relationships between stakeholders, and the distribution of resources and power within a society.[3] It is occasionally summarized as "innovations that are social both in their ends and in their means" (Franz et al.2012:3).

There is also a shared view across recent literature of appreciating the multiple levels and scales of SI that take place, from the individual to the macro level. As summarized in Table 1.1, based on Cajaiba-Santana (2014:48) and Nicholls and Murdock (2012:4), there are at three[4] levels of SI, which are micro (individual), meso (organization), and macro (social system). A successful SI process does not entail the accomplishment of an individual or an organization alone. Rather, it diffuses and/or scales with the involvement of different societal actors, and ultimately leads to a systemic change (also called "institutionalization") in a society. Such a change reconfigures how people understand the world, what they hold as values and norms, and how they behave on a daily basis, as well as becoming the new rules and regulations in a society. (Heiskala 2007:59; Pel and Bauler 2014:5; TEPSIE 2014:11; Westley and Antadze 2010:2).

---

[2] How to identify the "social issues" and what the positive social changes are (and what they are not) is one of the major questions for SI, since agreement on these points will depend on the society in question (Domanski and Kaletka 2017).

[3] Moore et al. (2012) describe the latter, borrowing the terminology from resilience theory, as the process of "release-reorganization-exploitation-conservation," by which existing resources in an ecosystem become available again and new lives begin to proliferate with new diversities.

[4] In the case of Nicholls and Murdock (2012:4) they add "Network / movement" as another dimension, but here I integrate it with organization.

Table 1.1 The Different Levels of Social Innovation: From Micro to Macro

Levels	Examples
Macro (Social system)	- Social recognition, values, norms, and behavior
	- Laws and regulations
	- Power / resource allocation and relationships among actors
Meso (Organization)	- Organizational practices and operations
	- Inter-stakeholder interactions and collaborations
Micro (Individual)	- New ideas and practices

Source: Developed by the author, revised from Nicholls and Murdock (2012:4)

If we use this definition of SI, it is evident that SI is not a recent phenomenon, but has indeed existed since the beginning of human history (Cajaiba-Santana, 2014:42; Mulgan et al. 2007:9; McGowan et al. 2017:1). As shown in Table 1.2, a wide range of historical initiatives are considered to be examples of SI, including some of the "newer" initiatives such as microfinance, sharing economy, fair trade, internet-based media, and socially responsible investment as well as initiatives of a more historical nature, such as public health and sanitation systems, modern university education, environmental movements, international labor standards, civil rights movements, feminism, and civic associations, to name just a few. The origins and processes of these SI initiatives are varied, from government-led policies, civil society or philanthropic initiatives, grass-roots and social movements, to societal changes led by business and technology.

Table 1.2 Examples of Social Innovation

Author	Examples of Social Innovation
Mulgan et al. (2007)	- Free and universal national health service, welfare states, school system - Internet and new media - Microcredit, building societies, trade unions and cooperatives - New university models in industrial societies - New welfare models developed by modern philanthropy and civil society - Social movements (anti-slavery, ecology, feminism, civil rights, anti-apartheid, anti-poverty, etc.)
Haxeltine et al. (2017); Pel et al. (2017)	- Basic income - Digital fabrication workshops - Eco-villages and other intentional communities - Network of social entrepreneurs - Participatory budgeting - Slow food - Sharing economy, time bank, local currency, and transition movement
Phills et al. (2008)	- Charter schools - Community-centered planning - Emissions trading - Fair trade - Habitat conservation plans - Individual development accounts - International labor standards - Microfinance - Socially responsible investing - Supported employment
Westley et al. (eds.) (2017)	- National parks in the United States - The intelligence test - The legalization of birth control in North America - The internet - The global derivatives market - Indian residential schools

	- Dutch joint stock company
Tanimoto et al. (2013)	- Renewable energy funded by citizens
	- Reusable dishes
	- Mail delivery service provided by disabled people
The Hope Institute (2017)	- Pulmu Farmers Cooperatives in South Korea
	- The Bann Mankong Community Upgrade Program in Thailand
	- Governmental "Social Management Innovation" in China
	- Indian social enterprises targeting the base of the pyramid (BOP)
	- Nonprofits and cooperatives entering the long-term care insurance scheme in Japan

Sources: Hazeltine et al. (2017); The Hope Institute (2017); Mulgan et al. (2007:9-11); Pel et al. (2017:7); Phills et al. (2008:40); Tanimoto et al. (2013); Westley et al. (eds.) (2017)

1.1.2 Why Social Innovation?

There seem to be some different expectations for what the outcome of SI will be. Based on Nicholls et al. (2015:2-3) which summarizes SI as a i) new social processes and ii) new social outputs and outcomes, we may re-categorize SI into three functions. First is *welfare*, to directly solve a social issue, or to provide necessary services, including education, health and care-giving, environmental issues, and employment among others, especially in situations where traditional service providers such as government or family systems are not able to provide such a function (Goldsmith 2010; OECD 2011). Second is *economic performance*, to transform a society in order to adapt to economic and technological changes such as globalization or a transformation in industrial structure, and to promote post-industrial, knowledge-based economic growth (Hamalainen and Heiskala eds. 2007; Sgaragli 2014). Third is the less-noticed aspect of *governance*, which is to improve societal relationships and integrity, often by empowering and enhancing the inclusion and participation of marginalized groups (BEPA 2011; Moulaert et al. 2013).

Such diverse expectations for SI come at least partly from the continuing debate on the future of the "welfare state" system in both developed and developing / emerging country contexts. The idea and

prototypes of a welfare state system, in which the public sector takes on the primary responsibility of providing basic social services to its citizens as a universal right, emerged in the late 19th century.[5] And under the WWII wartime mobilization and the post-war social-democratic environment, it was established as a social welfare system in a few industrialized countries, mainly in Western and Northern Europe (Esping-Andersen 1990:18-19; Lowe 1993; Pierson 2002:64; Tada 2014:3-12).[6] Indeed, the welfare state system itself was (or still is) a major SI initiative.

However, since the 1970s, the idea of a welfare state has been challenged for its growing cost and put under reforms based on neo-liberal ideas to minimize government involvement and leave the operation of services to market mechanisms (Pierson 1996:145). New social risks and needs have also been growing which the classic welfare state models were not designed to take care of, such as domestic care responsibilities for older people and children (while a large proportion of women have already moved into paid work), lack of skills and sufficient knowledge to respond to changes in industry, and low-paid workers (such as lower skilled women) not being covered by adequate benefits when leaving the workforce (Hamada and Kim 2018; Taylor-Gooby 2004:2-5). Reflecting the shrinking resources available to meet different needs, a number of countries, including the U.K. under the Thatcher administration, switched to market-friendly reforms of the welfare state model. They outsourced social services to the private sector, non-departmental public bodies, and non-governmental sectors or created quasi-market systems such as public insurance systems to substitute for the direct provision of services by the public sector (Esping-Andersen 1996:6-10; Imai 2016:178; Morgan and Campbell 2011:28-32).

And after the 1990s, as demographic shifts including aging, low fertility, and women's participation in the labor market increased, there was another wave of efforts to restructure welfare state

---

[5] Some of the earliest prototypes are the Poor Relief System in Britain or Medical / Injury / Elderly Pensions in late Nineteenth Bismarckian Century Prussia, but we need to note that these services were more of a charity or a favor, not a universal right (Tada 2014:6-9).

[6] Most of these classical examples of welfare states are based on democracy, but Inoue (2014:28-29) notes that social security systems are often introduced by authoritarian / populist regimes such as in Argentina under J. D. Perón, or in Brazil under G. D. Vargas.

systems and to meet diverse needs in society based on available resources, rather than being based on any sort of ideological confrontation (Hamada and Kim 2018:15-15; Miyamoto 2006; Pierson 2002:65). The "Third Way" advocated by the Blair administration (1997-2007) in the U.K. was one of the attempts to "modernize" the welfare state system by connecting work and welfare, giving more power to local-level groups including civil society organizations, and utilizing market mechanisms under the monitoring and supervision of the government (Giddens 1998; Imai 2016:182-184; Ohmura 2013:256-260).

The situation is quite different in developing countries, including those in Asia.[7] In most Asian countries including Japan after World War II (WWII), priority was given to constructing a newly independent state, and/or to restore an economy damaged by the war. Thus, a universal welfare state system was considered an unaffordable luxury (Kim 2008; Masuda 2013:7).

However, decades of economic growth have elevated many countries from a poor to a middle-income country status, and governments now have greater financial resources compared to decades ago. They are also facing increasing pressure from society to support diverse needs and demands, and there is also a strong frustration in many countries from those needs not being fulfilled (Inoguchi 2014:115). The very legitimacy of the government itself is greatly affected by how well the regime can meet those requests. These needs and issues in societies include both traditional "developing country" types of challenges as well as newer ones, including health and medical care, social diversity and minority rights, education, an aging population, people with disabilities, environmental issues, the transformation of the socio-economic system to a more post-industrial one, inequality, and poverty. Facing the weakening of traditional social safety nets and service providers such as family or local community, Asian countries have gradually expanded the scope of social policy to meet these needs (Shen 2016; Sugaya 2013:5). But the level of benefits and services are still quite limited compared to those in developed countries. Also, these states

---

[7] The authors pointed out that welfare state models from Europe / North America (represented by the earlier version of Esping-Andersen's model) could not be simply applied to Asian countries, due to different contexts such as the role of the state, business, organized labor, and other forms of social protections, and these different stakeholders acting as a "substitute" for or an "equivalent" of the welfare state (Estevez-Abe 2008; Zhang 2012).

seem to be reluctant to take on the full responsibility of a welfare state (Goodman and Peng 1996:207-209; Haggard and Kaufman 2008:256-261).

In either context, considering the proliferation of needs and issues in society, slowing economic growth, and limited or decreasing financial and human resources in public sectors, there is an even lesser chance that the state alone will be able to handle all the societal needs and risks in the future (Evers 1995:159; Ito and Kondo 2010:21-22; Miyamoto 2006:69). It also means that the need for social services accompanied by the "retreat" of the governmental sector from it creates more empty "public spaces" (Habermas 1994; Mukai 2015:208-211), or a "welfare vacuum" in society, especially at local or community levels, which need to be filled by different stakeholders in the society. Authors tend to agree that no one sector alone, including government, businesses, family, or civil society, can provide services to the full extent required, and that there is a need for stakeholders to collaborate and build a "welfare regime," "welfare society," or "welfare community" to deal with different social issues (Esping-Andersen 1999:36; Pestoff 2000; Pierre 2000:1; Salamon and Anheier 1998:225; Tsujinaka 2010:11-12).[8] SI also stems from the discourse on restructuring welfare regimes and is expected to be a tool to create such a "welfare community" by utilizing available resources.[9]

Moreover, some figures such as Mulgan point out that the purpose of SI goes beyond mere economic development, provision of services, and expansion of human rights movements. Instead, they propose more holistic, different social values to be fulfilled by SI. These values include the expansion of capabilities or the improvement of well-being or life satisfaction as the goal, although they admit that the methodology to measure this type of impact is yet to be developed.[10] By expanding its purpose in this way,

---

[8] Ueno (2011:217) even claims that the "welfare state" has already shifted to a "welfare society," following the upheaval and change of social welfare systems in actual policy.

[9] We also need to note that there are criticisms of SI from authors who see it as another face of neo-liberalism which serves to release the state from its responsibility to provide services based on universal rights (Jessop et al. 2013; Moulaert et al. 2013).

[10] Inoguchi (2014:28-32), based on a series of cross-country AsiaBarometer surveys conducted from 2003 to 2007, categorizes three dimensions of well-being in East Asia, which are: i) material conditions (modern facilities and infrastructure), ii) non-material conditions (social relationships), and the iii) function of the public

SI becomes a framework to measure the "quality of growth as well as its quantity" (Mulgan 2012:57-60).

1.1.3 Policy Development

The New Labour government in the United Kingdom (U.K.) from 1997 to 2010, led by Prime Ministers Tony Blair and Gordon Brown, enforced extensive social policies under the flag of "The Third Way." One of its major goals was to reduce the inequality between different areas and groups by promoting work-welfare integration and regenerating local initiatives through supporting voluntary and community sectors, instead of going back to the "traditional" welfare state system existing prior to the Thatcherist reforms, which provided uniform welfare services. They introduced some new policy tools and mechanisms (Murray et al. 2010:90; Tsukamoto et al. 2007; Zimmeck 2010). First was partnerships with the voluntary and community sectors. The New Labour government changed the contract-based partnerships between the government and voluntary sectors during the Thatcher and Major administrations. The new administration concluded national and local "Compacts" as a framework document between voluntary and community sectors. Then local authorities, businesses, voluntary and community sectors, and others including academic institutions together developed a multi-sectoral Local Strategic Partnership (LSP) and other issue-based partnerships such as Local Area Agreement (LAA) or Local Public Sector Agreement (LPSA), with a specification of services necessary in the community. The result was evaluated by the regional Government Office, by the Comprehensive Area Assessment (CAA) framework. Second was new funding mechanisms. The central government provided funding for local regeneration through newly established Neighbourhood Renewal Funds (NRF) and Community Empowerment Funds (CEF) for some poor communities through LSPs. Third was voluntary sector reform and support for social enterprise. British charity and voluntary sector reform took place during this period and led to the amendment of the Charities Act (2006), and the creation of two new legal statuses: Charitable Incorporated Organisation (CIO, for

---

sector. He notes that there is a pattern of non-material conditions becoming more important as the economies develop, and non-material conditions tend to have a negative effect on subjective happiness in the societies.

nonprofits) and Community Interest Company (CIC, for community-based social enterprises).

As the result of the policy shift[11] made by the New Labour government, total public spending rose from GBP 449 billion in 1996-1997 to GBP 725 billion in 2009-2010, up to 47.4 per cent of the GDP. It did not shrink inequality as intended, but helped to empower the voluntary sector, to improve the circumstances of the poor, and to support building an inclusive society for the immigrant population (Giddens 2010; Lupton et al. 2013:38-41). Still, the new forms of partnerships between the government and other sectors faced a number of challenges, including issues with implementation, governance, and representation (Zimmeck 2010).

After the change of government to the Conservative-Liberal Democratic Party coalition in 2010, most of the partnership frameworks including LSP or LAA were either abolished or converted into voluntary arrangements, and public expenditure for the voluntary sector was cut drastically. However, the "Big Society" policy launched by the new administration continued to stress the role of civil society organizations, social enterprises, and communities, and provided funding through the Big Society Fund which utilized dormant bank accounts, and the Transition Fund (Economist 2010; Harada 2013).

The Compact and other related partnerships between governments, voluntary and community sectors, and other local stakeholders were an attempt to mobilize locally-led innovations based on principles shared among different sectors, and although the New Labour government rarely used the term SI during their time, this policy mix of i) devolution to local level partnerships, ii) independent funding to support local initiatives to provide social service and create employment, and iii) support for social businesses and nonprofits became a model for later SI policies.

After the U.K., since the end of the 2000s,[12] with strong support from then-European

---

[11] Still there were some important similarities and continuities with the Conservative administrations, including the work and welfare connection, utilization of the charity sector as an executive arm of social service, and above all, the break with the traditional provision-based welfare systems.

[12] European Commission website: President Barroso Discusses How to Boost "Social Innovation" (20th Jan. 2009) http://ec.europa.eu/social/main.jsp?catId=89&langId=en&newsId=445&furtherNews=yes (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

Commission President Barroso, the term SI started to appear in some major European Union (EU) policy documents as a tool for the EU's poverty and social inclusion policy (BEPA 2011; European Commission 2010; 2013). After the European Financial Crisis, a number of EU member countries were forced to cut down on social spending, and SI was expected to substitute for social welfare services by creating employment, education, and training for vulnerable groups including immigrants and refugees, people with disabilities, the elderly, and unemployed women and youth.

In addition to the existing European Social Fund, a new EU Programme for Employment and Social Innovation (EaSI, 2014-2020) with a budget of EUR 919 million was created as an EU-level financing instrument to support member countries in the modernization of employment and social policies, improvement of job mobility, and promotion of microfinance and social entrepreneurship schemes (European Commission 2017).

The EU also supported numerous large-scale cross-country SI research projects (each with a budget of hundreds of millions of Euros) using the European Union's Seventh Framework Programme for Research, Technological Development and Demonstration (FP7, 2007-2013) and its successor Horizon 2020 (2014-2020).[13] The details of these research projects will be further described later in the literature review section (1.2.2).

In the United States (U.S.), the social policy of the Obama administration from 2009 to 2017 is well known for introducing the Affordable Health Care Act (so-called "Obamacare"), securing more equal rights for LGBT citizens, and implementing the Deferred Action for Childhood Arrivals (DACA) policy for young undocumented people.[14] It was also during the Obama administration when SI and related policy tools appeared in U.S. federal government policies. Soon after taking office in the aftermath of a major

---

[13] "FP7" page, Research Europa website: https://ec.europa.eu/research/fp7/index_en.cfm; "Horizon 2020" page, European Commission website: https://ec.europa.eu/programmes/horizon2020/en/ (Both retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[14] We should note that these policy and social changes (for example introducing affordable healthcare for all and accepting same-sex marriages in all states) are themselves a good sample of (controversial) SI initiatives, though I should not go into the details of each policy here.

financial crisis, Obama created the White House Office of Social Innovation and Civic Participation and the

Social Innovation Fund (SIF) by the Edward M. Kennedy Serve America Act in April 2009, for which he

received bipartisan support[15] (Barnes 2010; The Economist 2010; Potts 2017).[16] The SIF was intended to

bring evidence-based solutions to the most pressing social issues, such as health, education, housing, and

employment. SIF funding goes to grantees who are existing grant-making organizations (including

foundations, The United Way, nonprofit venture capitals, nonprofit alliances, and universities) through an

open competition process, and then the grantees are asked to raise a one-to-one match for the government

dollars from their own resources. Each grantee provides mixed funding to subgrantees, who are nonprofit

organizations working in local communities. Each subgrantee is also asked to raise matching funds

equivalent to what they received, and to implement programs to support the target population, typically in

poor communities (Figure 1.1). As a result, Federal government funding from 2010 to 2016 totaled up to

USD 352 million for fifty-seven awards, but the total funding matched to the federal money was USD 707

million.[17] According to a meta-analysis of thirty-eight final evaluation reports, forty-five percent of the

programs went into youth issues, thirty-two percent to health, and twenty-four percent to economic

opportunity (Zhang and Sun 2016:13).

---

[15] "Social Innovation Fund" page, Corporation for National and Community Service website:
https://www.nationalservice.gov/programs/social-innovation-fund (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[16] However, we should be aware that the Obama's Office of Social Innovation and Civic Participation was also a "variation" of former presidential initiatives to support community and voluntary activities, including Bill Clinton's AmeriCorps program and George W. Bush's Office of Faith-Based and Community Initiatives, each of them reflecting the respective president's personal preferences (Potts 2017:21).

[17] "Funded Organizations" page, Corporation for National Community Service website:
https://www.nationalservice.gov/programs/social-innovation-fund/funded-organizations (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

Figure 1.1 Obama Administration Social Innovation Fund (Classic Program)

```
┌─────────────────────────────────────────────────────────────┐
│                      ┌─────────────┐                          │
│                      │     SIF     │                          │
│                      └─────────────┘                          │
│   Technical assistance     │     Federal funding              │
│                            ▼                                  │
│   ┌──────────────────────────────────────────────┐           │
│   │  Grantees (existing grantmaking institutions) │           │
│   └──────────────────────────────────────────────┘           │
│                     Match │ $ 1:1                             │
│   Technical assistance     │     Federal funding              │
│                            ▼                                  │
│   ┌──────────────────────────────────────────────┐           │
│   │      Subgrantees (nonprofit organizations)    │           │
│   └──────────────────────────────────────────────┘           │
│                     Match │ $ 1:1                             │
│                            ▼                                  │
│              ┌──────────────────────────┐                    │
│              │     Target population     │                    │
│              └──────────────────────────┘                    │
└─────────────────────────────────────────────────────────────┘
```
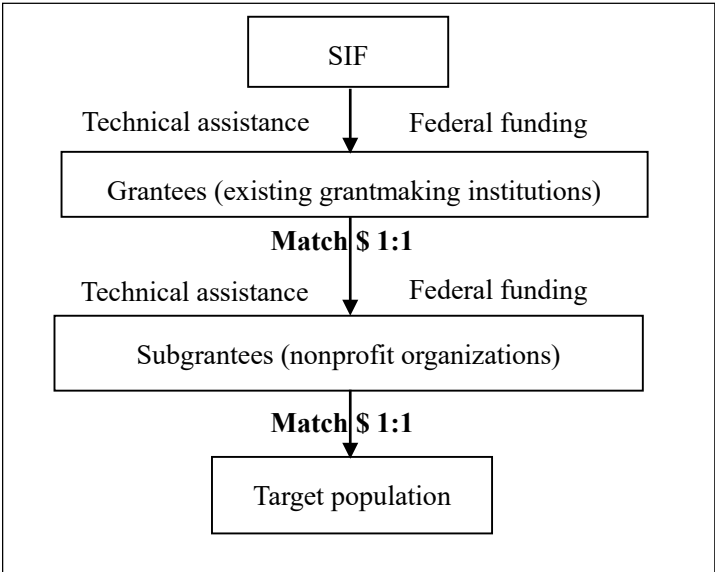
Source: Revised from Social Innovation Fund Fact Sheet, CNCS[18]

The goals of these policies, which came about in the aftermath of major economic and social crises, were to i) create funding mechanisms for nonprofit and social entrepreneurial projects both in the start-up and the growth stages, ii) create policy environments to enable innovative efforts, iii) utilize data and information tools to evaluate which interventions were truly effective, and iv) to do so without creating a new bureaucratic system or replacing existing funding frameworks. It came from a group of advisors like Michele Jolin,[19] who had experience both on the policy side and in supporting social enterprises at Ashoka, a global network of social entrepreneurs (Jolin 2008). Likely to be partly reflecting the ideas upheld by Jolin and other advisors with a social sector background, the SI policy frameworks during the Obama administration seemed to rely more strongly on the creativity and fundraising capacity of social sector organizations than European SI policies, while emphasizing the effective use of government funding by

---

[18] "Fact Sheet 2016 Social Innovation Fund", Corporation for National Community Service website: https://www.nationalservice.gov/sites/default/files/documents/CNCS-Fact-Sheet-2016-SocialInnovationFund_0.pdf (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[19] Jolin was appointed as a member of the White House Council for Community Solutions in 2010, after serving as a Senior Advisor for Social Innovation and a member of President Obama's Presidential Transition Team. She now runs a nonprofit organization, Results for America, a nonprofit that informs policy makers by utilizing data and evidence. "Michele Jolin" page, Results for America website: http://results4america.org/people/michele-jolin/ (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

using financial terms like "returns on investment".[20]

Another feature during this period was the growing popularity of the Social Impact Bond (SIB), or the Pay for Success (PFS) contract, as it is usually called in the U.S., within national and local governments. The basic arrangement is to receive funding from a private investor prior to the implementation of a social intervention program by a service provider, with the government later repaying the investor upon the impact of the program being proven by an independent evaluator (Figure 1.2). These contracts became extremely popular after the first case in the U.S. in 2012 between New York City and the Urban Investment Group at Goldman Sachs to reduce the rate of reincarceration among adolescent inmates in New York City's Rikers Island prison, quickly expanding to over thirty states by early 2016 and soon included in SIF as a SIF Pay for Success Program awarded to nonprofit organizations and state and local governments. However, this kind of "financialization" was also criticized for focusing only on the particular issues that fit these financial tools, such as broad-scale preventive or early intervention programs, and not being able to recognize the real needs of the community, as well as the costs involved with setting up complicated mechanisms (Lake 2016:48-54).

Finally, during this period, around twenty states introduced at least one legal status for social enterprises such as Benefit Corporation (B-Corp) or Low-profit Limited Liability company (L3C). These new legal entities made it possible for a business pursuing socially-oriented goals to receive program-related investment from private foundations[21] and other investors, by accepting the obligation to consider social responsibility and to issue an annual benefit report compiled by an independent auditor (Murray 2012).

---

[20] Still, the financial resources controlled by the White House Office of Social Innovation and Civic Participation were much smaller compared with the mainstream governmental funding controlled by Departments, and one of the major challenges for the Office was to get other departments to appreciate the collaborative working style with the social sector organizations (Potts 2017:26).

[21] Foundations in the U. S. have an obligation to pay out more than five percent of their assets annually as grants or program-related investment, and by being registered as these legal entities (B-Corp or L3C), social enterprises became a qualified target for investment from foundations.

Figure 1.2 Structure of the U.S. Social Impact Bond / Pay for Success Contract
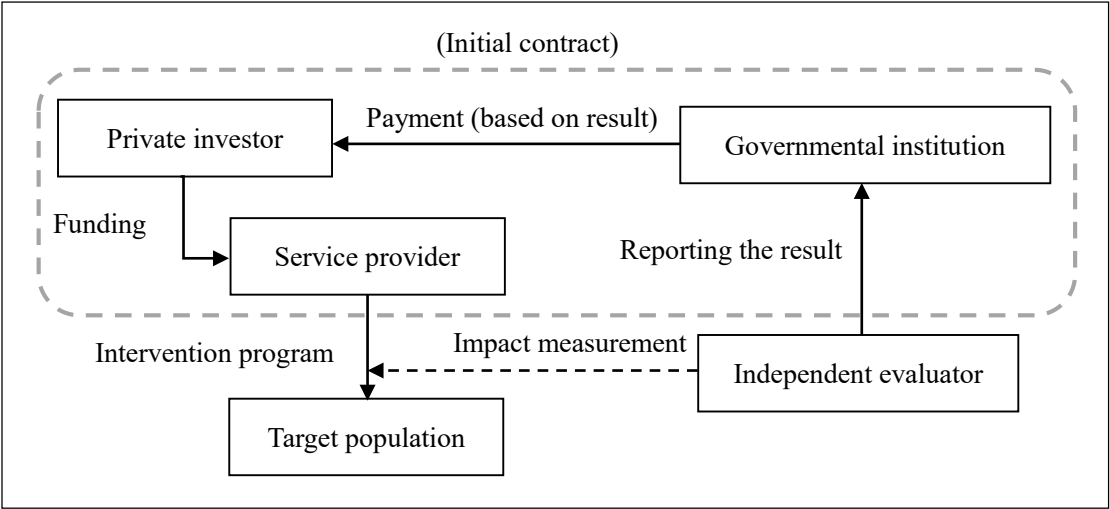
Source: Developed by the author

In Northeast and Southeast Asia, there is increasing pressure on governments to provide diverse social welfare services, especially in the aftermath of the major Asian economic crisis in the late 1990s and with changes in the socio-economic environment including rapidly aging societies, widening inequality, and slowing economic growth rates. Still, compared to Europe and the U.S., the policy application of SI in Asia has been mostly fragmental.

Arguably the champion of SI in Asia is the Seoul Metropolitan Government headed by Mayor Park Won-soon (2011-). Mayor Park set up the Seoul Innovation Bureau and mainstreamed SI as one of its major policy goals. Since then, the Seoul Metropolitan Government has introduced civic participation in policymaking processes, supported community-based organizations and social businesses, promoted sharing economy, and created supporting organizations including Seoul Innovation Park (C. 2018:7; Seoul Metropolitan Government 2015). Using Mayor Park's personal network with the international SI community including Geoff Mulgan and Social Innovation Exchange based in London, Seoul has been hosting a global annual "Future Innovation Forum" since 2015.[22]

---

[22] Future Innovation Forum 2018 website: http://www.seoulfif.co.kr/en/ (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018)

Excluding the above-mentioned example, SI in Asian countries is mostly used as a vague slogan to support social entrepreneurs, or is mixed in with more general business / technological innovation. At the same time, there are both central and local governments in different countries putting in efforts to i) collaborate with civil society and other social sectors such as social enterprise, and to ii) create a favorable environment for the sectors, often under different names such as "Social Management Innovation [*Shehui Guanli Chuangxin* 社会管理创新]" (China), or "Open Innovation" and "Public Service Innovation[23]" (Japan) (Hope Institute 2017:268-270). A recent event in Japan is the use of SI in the draft of the "Basic Plan for the Use of Funding from Dormant Bank Account Grant[24]" in January 2018. In the document, it states that the organization who receives the grant should utilize the funding "to bring major social change (social innovation[25]) in the society."

There is also strong interest from the business and financial sectors throughout Asia to utilize their resources for social investment (AVPN 2017; Mohan et al 2017a; 2017b).

1.2 Literature Review

SI is still an emerging concept and lacks a single, universally agreed upon definition. However, SI research has made significant progress and convergence in concept in recent years. There are also a variety of related concepts and theories. This section conducts a brief review of the theories and concepts that can support the development of a theory in this study. First, it shows how the theory of SI has developed, with some gaps between different regions especially in Europe, North America, and Japan and other Asian

---

[23] Cabinet Office, Government of Japan website: http://www5.cao.go.jp/keizai-shimon/kaigi/special/innovation/ (Public Service Innovation Platform [*Koukyou Saabisu Inobeeshon Pulattofuoomu* 公共サービスイノベーション・プラットフォーム] in Japanese, Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[24] Cabinet Office website: http://www5.cao.go.jp/kyumin_yokin/shingikai/20180131/shiryou_1.pdf (Basic Plan for the Use of Funding from Dormant Bank Account Grant [*Kyuuminyokintou Koufukin ni Kakawaru Shikin no Katsuyou ni Kansuru Kihonhoushin* 休眠預金等交付金に係る資金の活用に関する基本方針] in Japanese, retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[25] Here the definition of SI is explained on page thirty-six as "a new solution to respond to social issues which is more effective, efficient, and sustainable than existing solutions" (translated by the author).

countries.[26] Second, it presents some other literature and conceptual frameworks to inform this study.

1.2.1 Innovation Theory and Social Innovation

As briefly mentioned above, SI as a process of change is nothing new to human history. However, SI as a term is fairly new, and prior to the current nomenclature, a similar idea had been described by different names including social invention, social diffusion, social change, social regulation, or transformation by different authors including Weber, Durkheim, and Tarde (Howaldt et al. 2014a:3; Moulaert et al. 2013:17-18). The word "innovation" (or "new combinations" / "creative disruption", which were the terms Schumpeter used originally), as widely known, comes from the classic works of Schumpeter, and it is worth noting that these early works mentioned not only business and technological phenomena, but also wider socio-cultural aspects (Jessop et al. 2013:113-114; Schumpeter 1937:166-168; Schumpeter 1994:83-84). One of the first authors who used the term "social innovation" explicitly was Peter Drucker in his book *Innovation and Entrepreneurship*. What he meant by the word was more in relation to society in general than business-specific, to address and adjust problems caused by the change of social structures. Among other social innovations such as the modern governmental administration system, banks, insurance, and newspapers, the two major issues he raised were first the replacement and training of blue-collar workers who will become redundant in the post-industrial society, and second the restructuring of outdated social policies and obsolete public-service institutions (Drucker 1986:257-260).

However, the later mainstream of literature relating to innovation, especially in the U.S. after the 1980s, when the government started cutting funding to nonprofits, became more focused on business and technological innovations at the micro level of individual social enterprises or social entrepreneurs. When they mentioned "social innovation," it usually meant an entrepreneurship dealing with "social" fields such as education and health (Christensen 1997; Defourny and Nyssens 2013:21-22; Goldsmith 2010; Rogers

---

[26] For details of SI theories in Europe, North America, and Japan, see Aoo (2018a). Domanski and Kaletka (2017) is an excellent summary of current SI literature written in English.

1983). However, this approach was severely criticized by some authors such as Jessop et al. (2013:111) who called it "caring liberalism" that was trying to waive the responsibility of the public sector by letting it be handled by market mechanisms.

1.2.2 Development of Social Innovation Theories

The conceptualization and theorization of SI in the 2000s happened first in the United Kingdom and on the European continent, partly driven by the strong interest of policy makers. Two UK foundations, Young Foundation and Nesta, both led by Geoff Mulgan who worked for the Blair and Brown Administrations in 1997-2004, supported initial research works such as *Social Innovation: What it is, why it matters and how it can be accelerated* (Mulgan et al. 2007) and *The Open Book of Social Innovation* (Murray et al. 2010).

In Murray et al. (2010) the well-known model of the stages of SI was introduced, where an SI initiative starts as a new idea, and being tested, disseminated or scaled up, finally reaches the stage of systemic change (Figure 1.3).

Figure 1.3 The Six Stages of Social Innovation
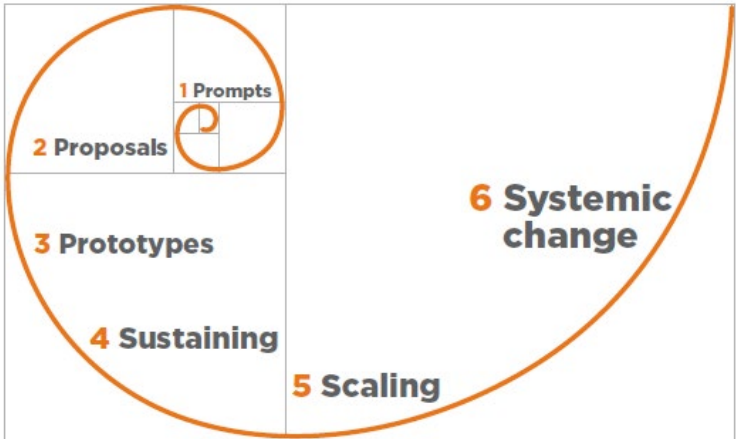
Source: Murray et al. (2010:11)

After the 2010s, as already mentioned, the EU began to support major SI research projects, including TEPSIE (Theoretical, Empirical and Policy Foundations for Social Innovation in Europe, 2012-

2015),[27] SI-DRIVE (Social Innovation – Driving Force of Social Change, 2014-2017),[28] TRANSIT (Transformative Social Innovation Theory, 2014-2017),[29] CRESSI (Creating Economic Space for Social Innovation, 2014-2018),[30] and ITSSOIN (Impact of the Third Sector as Social Innovation, 2014-2017).[31] This body of literature including Cajaiba-Santana 2014; Domanski and Kaletka 2017; Haxeltine et al. 2015; Howaldt et al. 2014a; Moulaert et al. 2013; Nicholls and Murdock. 2012; Nicholls et al. 2015; Pel and Bauler 2014; TEPSIE 2014 and non-European authors who have close connection to their projects, such as the Hope Institute (2017) and Westley and Antadze (2010), though with differences in focus and emphasis, have still been able to develop considerable common conceptual frameworks and understandings. First, they established a clear conceptual distinction of SI from general (technology and business-oriented) innovation, social entrepreneurship, and social enterprise theories. This was accomplished by contributions from different academic disciplines such as the incorporation of structuration, institutionalism, agency, and social change theories. Second, they included non-business sectors and organizations such as governments, nonprofit organizations, cooperatives and other actors working on social economy and social issues as stakeholders in SI processes.[32] Third, a multi-dimensional understanding of SI was established, not only as an economic-technological phenomenon in one organization, but also as a change in understanding, cognition and framing in a society, societal and power relations, and systemic change in a society. Fourth, they paid attention to the process of individual SI initiatives leading to macro-level systemic change,[33] or the "institutionalization" of SI through scaling-up and diffusion. Finally, they showed a strong interest in connecting SI to the issue of social inclusion and empowerment of marginalized groups, inequality, and

---

[27] "TEPSIE: Growing Social Innovation" page, The Young Foundation website: https://youngfoundation.org/projects/tepsie/ (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[28] SI-DRIVE website: https://www.si-drive.eu/ (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[29] TRANSIT website: http://www.transitsocialinnovation.eu/ (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[30] CRESSI blog: http://cressi.sbsblogs.co.uk/2017/10/27/the-cressi-project/ (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[31] ITSSOIN website: http://itssoin.eu/ (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[32] Such emphasis on social sectors partly reflects the strong tradition of social economy literature in Europe, and the research works on social enterprise done by European scholars in EMES (*l'Emergence De Entreprises Sociales*) group and others, such as Borzaga and Defourny eds. (2001) and Defourny and Nyssens (2013).

[33] It is called by different names, including societal transformation and macro-level change.

social justice.

Along with theoretical investigations, there were a large number of empirical analyses and case studies of individual SI projects, networks, sectors and global initiatives (Heals and Green 2016; Howaldt et al. 2014b; SI-DRIVE 2018). The theoretical nature of European SI literature seems to be in parallel with the expectations from the policy side (national governments and the EU) to utilize SI as a tool for social regeneration and inclusion, and to deal with severe social division and the exclusion of marginalized groups (including refugees and immigrants, youth, the poor, and unemployed citizens).

In the U.S., the Stanford Social Innovation Center was established in 2000 and in 2003, the first volume of the *Stanford Social Innovation Review* was published. During the 1990s and early 2000s, the focus of SI research in the United States was on social enterprises, coming from two different interests. First were those coming from the social entrepreneur and social venture backgrounds, applying business models and methodology to social issues, and second were nonprofit organizations shifting their operations to increase the amount of income-generating activities after the decrease in governmental funding. The meaning of SI at that time was more closely related to the financially sustainable application of a new product or methodology for a social cause (Dees 1998; Goldsmith 2010:13-14; SSIR Editor's Note 2003).

However, in the second half of the 2000s, SI literature in the U.S. began paying more attention to relationships between various actors. For instance, a well-known SSIR editorial, "Rediscovering Social Innovation" (Phills et al. 2008), re-defined SI and added being "just" and value creation for society as a whole, not only for a limited group. Interest has also been growing recently in a "systemic change approach" by connecting foundations or philanthropies, communities, and nonprofit sectors, something which cannot be accomplished by a social entrepreneur or social enterprise alone (Ganz et al. 2018; Kramer 2017).

Meanwhile in Canada, Frances Westley and her group based in Waterloo University developed an SI theory which shows similarity to the U.K. and European literature by distinguishing the difference between SI and social entrepreneurship and focusing on the impact of SI on change at the systemic level,

including power and resource allocation, laws and common practices, and the basic beliefs that govern the society (Westley and Antadze 2010:3-4). Her group later conducted a historical analysis of SI initiatives[34] and discovered seven cross-cutting patterns (Westley 2017:240-254, Figure 1.4). First, they emphasized the importance of meaning, that a new idea or social philosophy is behind a breakthrough, such as the creation of national parks driven by Romantic tradition, or the Internet based on the ideological foundations of counterculture. Second was the notion that SIs take time to unfold and therefore transcend the efforts of individuals. In some cases, the changes may take hundreds of years, and are not accomplished by one individual entrepreneur. For instance, different groups of agents like poets, explorers, academics, environmentalists, politicians, and managers all made a significant contribution at different times and in different ways to the establishment of national parks. A large-scale event like WWII may bring about drastic change, as it had on the use of intelligence testing and contraception methods. The third point is that the coherency of principles, not the consistency of practice, is important. Although different individuals and ideas participate in SI initiatives and the process transforms greatly over time, there is a surprising consistency with the initial conditions and ideas seen in the process. Fourth, combination with initiatives in the "adjacent possible" shapes the innovation itself. Each innovation, over time, combines and recombines with the adjacent possible, which is the alternative social phenomenon beyond existing reality. This may lead to the deterioration of the initiative, unless there is a person (like Margaret Sanger for the birth control movement) who can negotiate with different groups (the army, policy makers for poverty alleviation, and industries in Sanger's case). Fifth is the paradoxes and tensions which characterize SIs. Within an SI initiative, there may be ideas that are very different or in conflict with each other. For instance, national parks highlighted tensions between conservation and tourism, or between nature and culture. Still, such a paradox eventually works as a catalyst to evolution in the dynamics of SI processes. Sixth is that conflicts, oppositions, and opportunities stimulate combinations and re-combinations in SI. SIs develop new elements

---

[34] Westley et al. (2017) notes that although their samples were "successful" in terms of having impact on society, the impact was not necessarily a positive one, for instance the intelligence test.

by having partners (for resource development) who may seem to be strange, and the combination defines

future conflicts and debates within the initiatives. Seventh is the different effects positive and negative

policy change have on SI development. Supporting policies create a stable environment for SI

experimentation and development, while suppressive policies (such as the Comstock Act which illegalized

birth control) stimulate a shadow network (which waits for the opening of a window of opportunity),

conflict, and opportunistic behavior.

Figure 1.4 Historical Analysis of National Parks as a Social Innovation
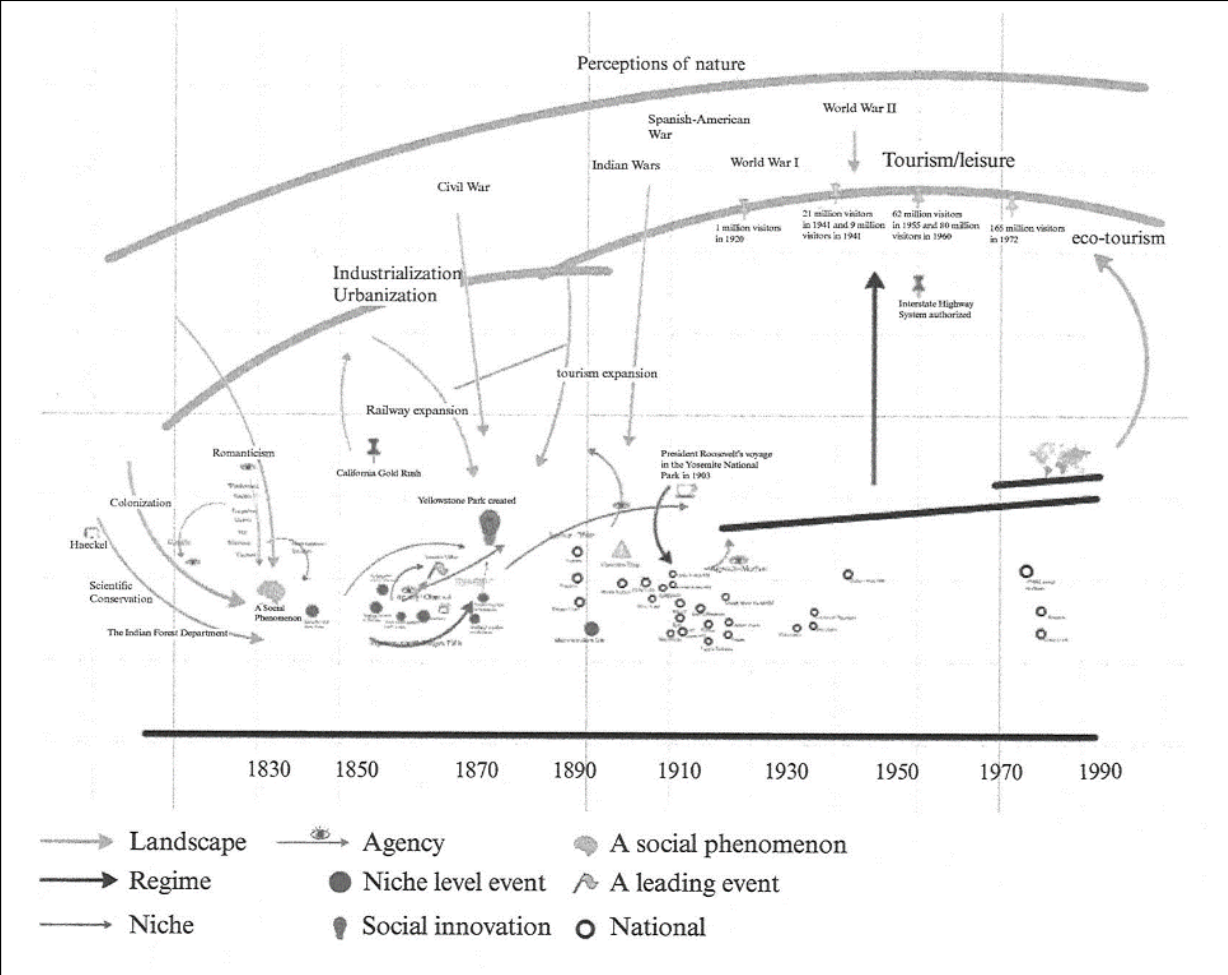
In Japan, SI study has been conducted mostly by scholars with a business administration

background (Kaneko et al. 2010; Nonaka et al. 2014; Takahashi et al. 2018; Tanimoto et al. 2013; Watanabe

and Tsuyuki 2009), together with some others from nonprofit organization studies (Fujii et al. 2013; Hattori et al. 2010). Thus, their conceptual frameworks mostly come from general innovation theories such as Schumpeter, Drucker, Christensen, and Rogers. With a few exceptions such as Ohmuro (2009) or Tanimoto et al. (2013), most of them seem to have little connection with the recent SI literature (other than works on social enterprise and entrepreneurship) developed in Europe and North America. The strength of their research is in empirical analysis of individual cases or organizations, including for-profit companies and nonprofit organizations which create SI initiatives, and the relationships or ecosystems with other stakeholders surrounding them in a local community. Compared to European or American SI literature, they rarely discuss the macro-level impact of SI or the processes of how individual SI cases can lead to systemic change, partly because of unavailable data and other technical limitations (Ohmuro, 2009; Tanimoto et al. 2013). Another characteristic, probably reflecting the interest of policy makers such as governments and foundations, is their strong focus on the individual "tools" of SI, including social enterprise, impact measurement (such as SROI, or social return on investment), or social investment bonds (SIB, Fujii et al. 2013; Laratta et al. 2011; Tsukamoto and Kaneko 2017).

SI literature in Japan and other Asian countries consists mainly of individual case studies (O'Byrne et al. 2014; Teets 2011; Zhao 2015), and not many theoretical works have been produced (Lin and Chen 2016; Shen and Li 2017). Among them, "The Social Innovation Landscape in Asia," a research project conducted by Korean think-tank NGO the Hope Institute, is arguably the most comprehensive attempt to investigate Asian SI initiatives. The Hope Institute team derived their conceptual understanding of SI from European SI literature, in particular TEPSIE (2014), and analyzed forty-six cases from five Asian countries, China, India, Japan, South Korea, and Thailand. As a result, they stressed the diverse political-economic-social contexts among Asian countries, as well as some characteristics observed in Asian countries which are different from European or North American countries, such as i) rapid and compressed socio-economic development led by the government, ii) a lack of consolidated frameworks to secure democratic and civic rights, and iii) weak governance in government sectors and the obstacles facing

collaboration between the public and civil sectors often seen in developed countries (Hope Institute 2017:255-256). As a result, they argue that "SI in Asia has emerged as a response to growing challenges that often result from the "failure" of modern welfare states and free market capitalism," and presented seven characteristics of SI in Asia extracted from the most commonly observed terms in their case analyses (Figure 1.5), which are i) people-centered development, ii) community empowerment, iii) Information and communication technology (ICT) based civic engagement, iv) public sector leadership and local governance, v) social entrepreneurship, vi) intermediary organizations, and vii) cross-sectoral partnership.

Figure 1.5 Social Innovation Keyword Cloud

Source: Hope Institute (2017:255)

This research successfully illustrated the potential power of alternative developmental initiatives originating from grassroots movements, but it still omitted any capture of the process of scaling or the mechanisms for its causation. Other works include the "Research on the Social Innovation Eco-System in Asia" project supported by the Toyota Foundation which this author took part in, analyzing the scaling processes of SI initiatives from five countries (China, Japan, South Korea, Singapore, and Thailand, including Aoo 2018b), and the special 2017 issue of *Stanford Social Innovation Review* "Social Innovation and Social Transition in East Asia," which highlighted examples from China, Hong Kong, Japan, and South Korea (SSIR 2017).

While SI both as a policy term and a practice is becoming popular in different parts of the world, even giving rise to euphoria in the hopes that it can solve various social issues, there are also growing concerns that it is not being scaled as expected and delivering the expected outcome, or at least its results are not being felt by many, including many who need it most. Successful social entrepreneurs and social innovators have come to attract attention and funding from donors and the government with a slogan of "scaling what works," and their operations may grow at a remarkable speed. However, there are still many being left behind who could benefit from those services, and moreover the issues themselves or the root causes which lie beneath the problems are not being solved (Bradach and Grindle 2014; Ganz et al. 2018). This echoes the frustration seen in European SI documents which wonder why EU- or national-government funded SI initiatives do not "scale" and bring desired impact on a larger scale (Howaldt et al. 2014a:17).

Bradach and Grindle (2014) give practical advice on how to scale successful interventions to a level where they reach the "transformative scale": i) distributing through existing platforms, ii) recruiting and training others, iii) unbundling and scaling up parts with the greatest impact, iv) using technology to reach a larger audience, v) strengthening the field by either raising awareness of an issue or strengthening the players involved in that field, vi) changing public systems, vii) embracing the need for policy change, viii) considering using for-profit models for scaling, and ix) altering people's beliefs, attitudes, and behaviors so that the change becomes the new social norm. Although most of these suggestions are concerned with disseminating individual programs to other areas and groups, others include some broader and crucial points, such as utilizing governmental or business sectors for scaling, and working on society at large to change their mindsets and attitudes.

Making It Big: Strategies for scaling social innovations[35] is a report prepared by Nesta. It is based on previous works done by Murray et al. (2010)[36] and interviews with different social innovators

---

[35] Here "scaling" is used to show "when impact grows to match the level of need," rather than the growth of individual projects or social organizations.

[36] For example, it sophisticates the six stages of SI (shown as Figure 1.3 above) proposed by Murray et al. (2010) to seven steps – i) exploring opportunities and challenges, ii) generating ideas, iii) developing and testing,

and presents four routes for SI scaling which do not rely on talented individuals: i) influencing and advising through advocacy, consultation or trainings, ii) building a delivery network by expanding the movement or replicating specific services, iii) forming strategic partnerships between governments, businesses, and social sectors,[37] and iv) growing the scale of a service-delivery organization. Here the ideas of size expansion (such as the case of BRAC in Bangladesh) and delivery networks are still there, but there is more emphasis on other multi-sectoral strategies such as campaigning and policy advocacy, building strategic alliances, creating common values and a mission by creating a brand and blueprint for social innovation (Gabriel 2014:22-27).

Another emerging viewpoint in SI literature is a perspective that focuses on a national or local "SI ecosystem," which is a combination of social demands, actors, resources, processes dynamics and interactions between them (Aoo 2018b; Domanski 2018; Sgaragli and Giacomo Brodolini Foundation 2014). It seems to be a promising approach, especially to analyze the "missing link" of how individual SI initiatives connect to macro-scale impact. Still, so far it has gone little further than listing prominent institutions, projects and resources, and/or emphasizing the importance of having collective networks to generate SI (Guida and Maiolini 2014), and fails to provide an empirical analysis of the actual processes by which such ecosystems foster SI initiatives and develop them into scale, and how local contexts affect the processes.

1.2.3 Other Relevant Theories

Since SI literature is affected by various concepts and theories, there is a wide range of scholarship that is contributing to its development. Here are some of the most relevant theories and frameworks that serve to help develop this study.

---

iv) making the case, v) delivering and implementing, vi) growing, scaling and spreading, and vii) changing systems

[37] Defourny and Nyssens (2013:48-49) warn of the risk of SI initiatives moving toward "isomorphism," a loss of dynamics coming from the pressure raised by legal frameworks or business-oriented practices.

Institutional / structuration theories have provided a strong basis for SI literature. Cajaiba-Santana (2014:43) points out the theoretical dichotomy of agency and structuralism in SI research. Authors such as Heiskala draw examples from institutionalism or structuration theories including Bourdieu, Giddens, and Max Weber to draw attention to the historical and organizational path-dependency and the way such dependencies reproduce and limit the possible development of historical processes (Heiskala 2007:53; Howaldt el al. 2014a:24-28).

Transitions theories, or social change theory, is the other side of the agency-structuration dichotomy. It emphasizes the role of agency, and "change agents" (Chiappero-Martinetti and Jacobi 2015: Goldsmith 2010). It helps the building of a social systems theory, but has also been criticized for being too abstract, and for its weakness in connecting empirical phenomena, especially the collaboration, negotiation and compromising mechanisms between different stakeholders, with a theoretical framework (Haxeltine et al. 2015:5).

Welfare nation / regime / society is another group of concepts which require attention to understand the current SI debate. Theories beginning with the classic Esping-Andersen work *The Three Worlds of Welfare Capitalism*, which presented three welfare state models (Esping-Andersen 1990), different welfare regimes or welfare society models have been proposed in order to investigate the arrangements between state, market, and other sectors including family, community, and the social sector. They are significantly helpful since they can be used as tools to measure how societal relationships, distribution of resources, and burden and risks change as an outcome of an SI initiative.

It should be noted that even in his 1990 book, Esping-Andersen set three models (Liberal, Corporatist, and Social Democratic) not only as variations of welfare states, but also as categories of welfare regimes based on a mix of contributions from the state, market, and family sectors. He also placed special emphasis on how the labor markets for different gender and age groups affect welfare coverage and the provision of care services (Esping-Andersen 1990:26-28, 222-226). In his later work (Esping-Andersen 1999:35-36) he further highlighted the role of non-state actors, especially family. However, these models

still had limitations as frameworks targeting primarily industrialized societies, not resource-scarce contexts

which lack significant input from the state.

Based on Esping-Andersen's categorization,[38] Salamon and Anheier (1998) added a nonprofit

sector which functions either as a substitute for a welfare state (in a few countries which fall under the

"liberal" category such as the U.S. and the U.K.), or as a complement, by receiving funding from the state

and working as a service provider within a welfare state system in Western European and Nordic countries.

Evers (1995) and Pestoff (2000), and Sakamoto and Tsujinaka (2012:24) proposed a model of a welfare

mix concept made up of state, market, and private household and community, and the third sector, which

includes both voluntary and nonprofit, cooperatives and other social economy organizations, as shown in

Figure 1.6. They emphasized the intermediating role of the third sector between different sectors, acting as

"a part of the public space in civil societies" and bringing a synergetic mix of resources into welfare (Evers

1995:159-161, 173; Pestoff 2000:45-54).

Figure 1.6 The Welfare Triangle and the Third Sector
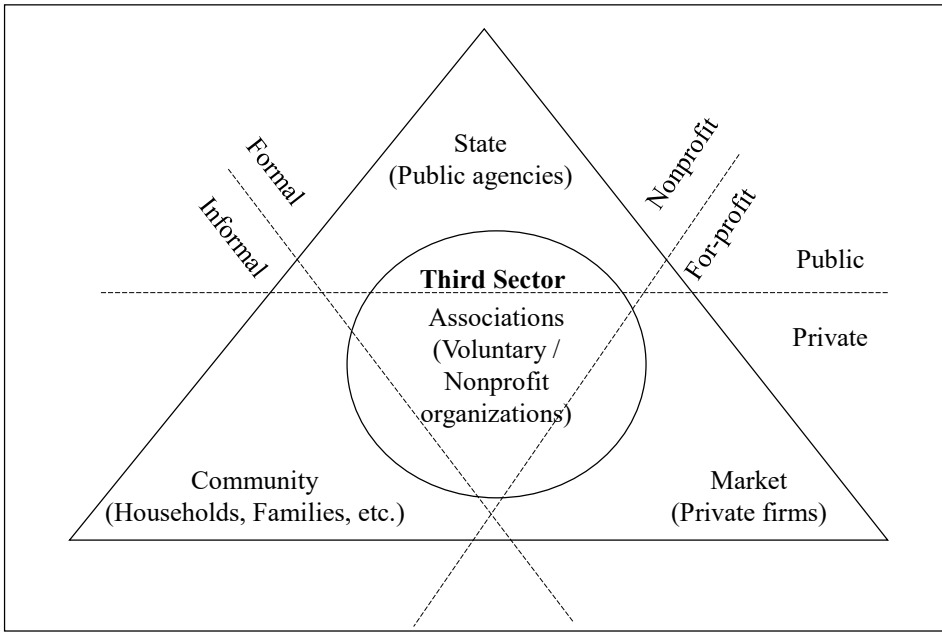
Source: Pestoff (2000:42)

---

[38] They added another category (Statist) to Esping-Andersen's models (Salamon and Anheier 1998:228).

Ochiai (2009); Ochiai et al. (2010), along with Ueno (2011) developed the "care diamond" (or "welfare quadrangle" as the latter proposes) model to illustrate how different sectors share welfare costs and risks. It consists of state, market, community (including nonprofit sectors), and family. Figure 1.7 shows examples of care diamonds representing two different welfare regimes, the first where the state provides services (Society A), and the second where the welfare state system is non-existent and family and community become the main care providers (Society B). Compared to the Evers-Pestoff model, which defined the third sector as an intermediary sector within a state-market-family/community triangle (thus demonstrating its role of covering the "welfare residual" of other sectors), this model has the advantage of showing the contribution of different sectors visually and is suitable for cross-country or cross-time comparisons.

Figure 1.7 "Care Diamond" Models: Welfare and Non-Welfare States

Source: Ochiai (2009); Ochiai et al. (2010); Ueno (2011:217)

Although a state - market dichotomy model and government – market - community triangle are both useful as conceptual frameworks, they can describe very little about the complex and dynamic interactions between individual stakeholders within an actual policy process. To understand multi-stakeholder processes from micro (individual) to macro levels, it will be useful to apply other tools from different disciplines. The analytical frameworks and concepts derived from the study of "governance

networks," led by Kooiman and Rhodes among others, allow us to investigate a detailed institutional mechanism and interactions.

As Figure 1.8 shows, the policy (defined as a desirable social output, such as a social service) is seen to come as a result of governance processes between various stakeholders including governments, businesses, service providers, and civil society. The actors can interact and negotiate in the processes, and there will be self-regulation to govern behavior within the network. The government is no longer the sole owner of the policy, but continues to intervene either as a stakeholder, or through providing a "meta-governance" to the network by setting guidelines, regulations, and standards for the policy (Abe 2016; Sorensen and Torfing 2006:4-5; Rhodes 1997:9-11, 36-45; Kooiman 2003:83, 104-106).

It is important to note that the governance network is not always supportive of SI and may in fact work conversely, but this framework enables us to analyze a wider range of stakeholders than traditional principal-agent or corporatist theories, as well as to illustrate the dynamic chain of processes that will formulate (or fail to formulate) a policy outcome, within a certain context and scope.

Figure 1.8 Governance Network Diagram

Source: Developed by the author

30
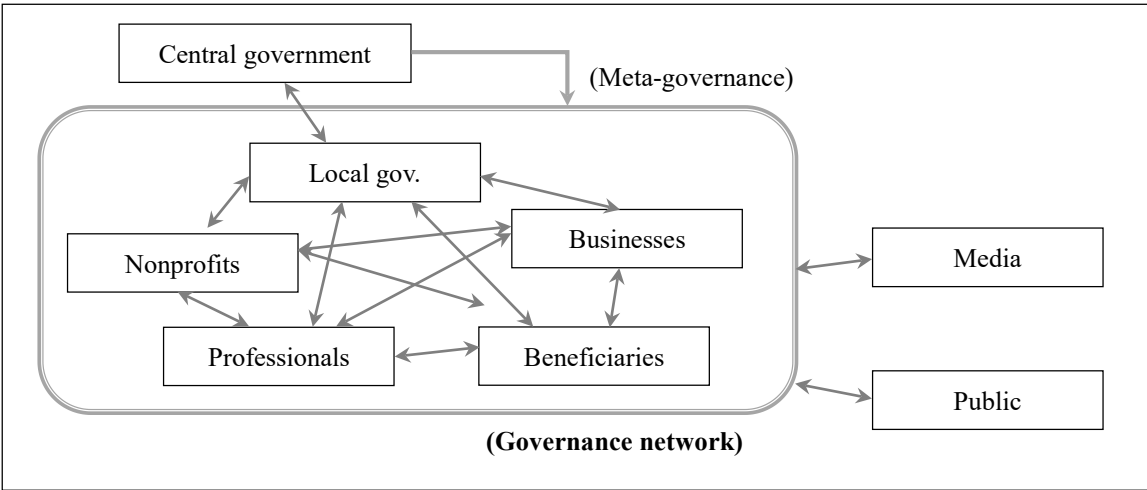
1.2.4 The Gap in Current SI Literature

As seen above, significant advances have been made in SI theoretical and empirical research. It has enabled

SI theory to be a conceptual framework which is independent from more general innovation theory, and

through connections with other related discourses, has created a sound theoretical basis to develop future

practice and research. However, researchers have noted that there is still a significant gap both between i)

practice and theory, and between ii) individual initiatives and macro-level impact / structural change

(Cajaiba-Santana 2014:49; Haxeltine et al. 2017:15). They have stressed the need to develop a "middle-

range theory" to bridge these gaps, especially the latter, but the challenge of how to trace and analyze the

complexity of multi-sectoral SI processes has kept this an ongoing research challenge, apart from a few

ambitious attempts such as Westley et al. (2017). Although Murray et al. (2010:87-100) have pointed out

multiple paths that lead to scaling of SI initiatives from the growth of individual organizations,

collaboration, licensing and franchising, replication, diffusion, dissemination, and the commissioning and

adoption by authorities, the actual processes of scaling were largely still in the black box. This gap, which

is closely linked to the policy maker and practitioner's challenge and desire to "scale up" SI initiatives and

to bring about greater impact (Clarence 2014: 47; Goldsmith 2010:6; Howaldt et al. 2014a:61), remains one

of the greatest questions still unanswered in the development of SI theory.[39]

Also, so far most of the major contributions to developing SI theories have come from Europe

and North America. Other regions, including Asia, have mostly been merely providing empirical cases and

evidence. In-depth analysis of SI processes in Asia to contribute to conceptual development is a relatively

uncharted research area.[40]

The objective of this study is to fill in these major gaps, even partially, based on an empirical

---

[39] Yet Clarence (2014:51-53) notes that not all successful SI initiatives are suitable for scaling, or even necessary to scale, depending on their readiness, resources, receptivity, risks and returns for scaling (such as the possibility of quality of care services being lost as a result of scaling).

[40] A few exceptions are The Hope Institute (2017) and the country reports produced by the "Research on the Social Innovation Eco-system in Asia" project led by Ken Ito, funded by the Toyota Foundation (including Aoo 2018b).

analysis of SI initiatives in selected Asian countries. It examines the processes of scaling, how different

stakeholders and factors influence the processes, and how this leads to having (or not having, in some

cases) macro-level impact on a society.

1.3 Research Design

1.3.1 Research Questions

This study intends to fill in the gaps in the existing SI literature, as stated above. The main question to be

answered is:

"What are the factors and causal mechanisms that affect the scaling of (or the failure of) social

innovation initiatives in selected Asian countries?"

While answering this main question, the study also deals with a set of accompanying questions, such as: i)

What are the roles of central and local governments, businesses, and civil society[41] within these processes?

ii) What are the governance mechanisms between multi-sectoral stakeholders that lead to successful (or not

so successful) scaling? iii) Are "top-down" or "bottom-up" processes more successful in the scaling of

initiatives? iv) Are "indigenous" or "foreign" ideas / initiatives more successful in scaling? v) How do other

factors, including political and socio-economic systems, values and norms, legislation, crises, or the use of

technology influence the processes? vi) What infrastructures and policies are helpful for enhancing the

social innovation processes in different countries?

To answer these questions, this study conducts an empirical analysis of case studies and their

comparison to investigate the SI processes and results (both successful and failed) in different countries,

then investigates the causes of the differing results, the scaling patterns and the governance mechanisms. It

also compares the differences and similarities between Asian countries, and between Asian and European

---

[41] When this study mentions "civil society," it includes a wide variety of sectors and organizations which are not primarily governmental or for-profit, including nonprofits, social enterprises, cooperatives, and other voluntary organizations and associations.

countries. The details of the methodology are explained further in the following section 1.3.3.

1.3.2 Theoretical Framework

This study attempts to fill the major gap of explaining the causal connection between individual SI initiatives and macro-level changes in a society. It pays particular attention to how SI initiatives scale up and diffuse through interaction with different stakeholders, and finally have (or fail to have) macro-level impact in a society. Figure 1.9 shows the four stages of SI scaling processes used for this study, a consolidation of the well-known six steps (i. Prompts – ii. Proposals – iii. Prototypes – iv. Sustaining – v. Scaling – vi. Systemic change) proposed by Murray et al. (2010). Each stage corresponds to the following step: **Stage 1: Ideation** is the initial step when the new idea is brought in, either as a strange "invention" of a local practitioner or an entrepreneur or introduced as a foreign idea. **Stage 2: Incubation** is when one or more individual organizations or projects, sometimes in collaboration with different stakeholders, attempt to materialize the new idea, often on the local community level. This is where most of the existing SI literature focuses on. **Stage 3: Acceleration** is when the Incubation stage is successful, and the scale of the initiative expands. It should be noted that this may be accomplished through a) top-down implementation of the initiative as a policy or program of a national or local government (or another organization with sufficient resources, such as grant-making foundations), which is called "scale-up;" b) diffusion to or imitation of a successful initiative by other communities, often with certain adjustments or "localization," which is a bottom-up process and called "scale-out;" or c) a combination of both (Tamamura 2014:28).[42]
Stage 4: Institutionalization (also referred to as a "systemic change") is when the majority of the members in a society accept the idea as a "normal" or an unquestionably positive value, adopt the behavior, and new laws or regulations endorse the value. Here we should be cautious that the "goal" for an SI process is not to have it become a law or a policy, since there are numerous examples of new laws or governmental

---

[42] Still we need to be aware that literature use these terms in different way, like using "scaling out" for quantitative growth of a SI initiative (Haxeltine et al. 2015:27).

policies failing to become "embedded" within a society or meeting with opposition from stakeholders in the implementation stage and thus making hardly any impact.[43] Therefore, this study defines the SI initiative as having had macro-level impact only when there is some (even anecdotal) evidence that the idea is widely accepted in the society, and strongly embedded within the values, behaviors, and rules of the people and organizations.

Figure 1.9 Four Stages in the Social Innovation Process
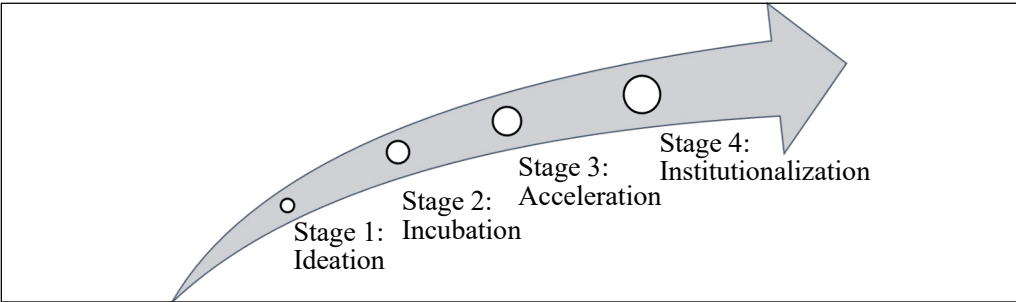
Source: Developed by the author (revised from Murray et al. 2010:11)

This research pays particular attention to how SI processes may succeed or fail to scale or become institutionalized, corresponding to stages three and four in the categories described above. On the contrary, it does not investigate the details of individual projects or attempts (stages one and two) unless there is a strong connection to the scaling processes.

When analyzing the SI scaling processes, it seems natural to follow the path of one successful organization and all related actors surrounding that organization. However, it is obvious that no successful SI processes are achieved by one person or organization but are instead the outcome of multi-sectoral interactions and diffusions, similar to the way different microcredit organizations and projects flourished following the famous success story of Muhamad Yunus. Therefore, to conduct such analyses, this study attempts to investigate a sector-level interaction of different stakeholders, including governments,

---

[43] One (in)famous example was the 1920 prohibition law, or the Eighteenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution, which attempted to ban the consumption of alcohol in the U.S.

businesses, and civil society. As Figure 1.10 illustrates, this perspective owes a great deal to the findings of

network governance theory but has been modified to fit the purposes of the study.

Figure 1.10 Governance Spaces for Social Innovation Processes
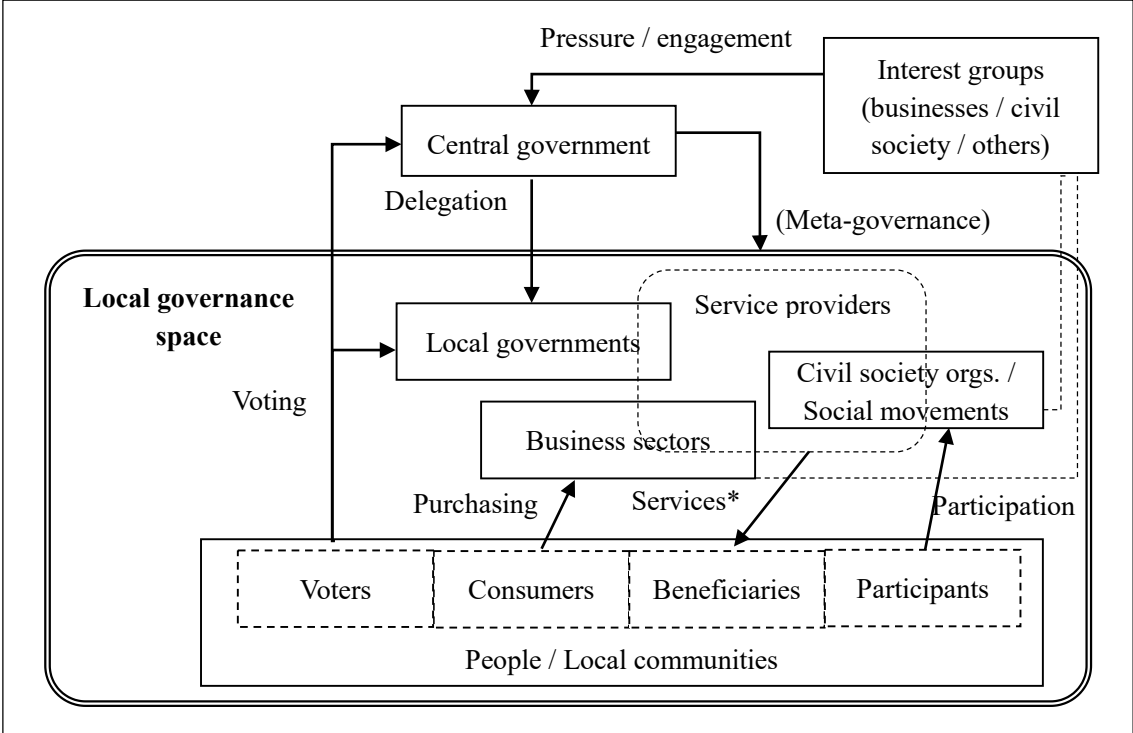
*Services may go under "purchasing" when beneficiaries can choose the provider.

Source: Developed by the author

1.3.3 Methodology: Case Studies and Process Tracing

To answer the research questions presented above, this study uses case studies as the main analytical tool,

for two reasons. First, a large amount of quantitative data that we can use for statistical analysis is not

available from the targeted Asian countries. If we try to collect a large number of samples, the homogeneity

and comparability of the data may be questionable and run the risk of putting dissimilar samples together.

Second, case study analysis is more suitable for the purpose of the study. To answer the questions stated

above, this study attempts process tracing and causal process observation, to analyze possible mechanisms

and causal contributions between various factors and outcomes (Brady et al. 2010:24; Collier et al.

2010:202-203; George and Bennett 2005:6, 27-31; King et al. 1994:86[44]; Ragin 1993:36).

As mentioned earlier, case studies in existing SI research tend to focus on individual SI projects or organizations, and to investigate how the initiative developed and the relationships with other stakeholders in terms of idea creation, financing, and operation or service provision.

A major attempt to apply process theory to SI initiatives and societal transformation can be seen in the TRANSIT project. Haxeltine et al. (2015) proposes:

> "Process theory is interested in discovering patterns in sequences of events, variance
>
> theory in explaining observed outcomes with the help of explanatory variables. …
>
> process theories provide explanations in terms of the sequence of events leading to an
>
> outcome." (Haxeltine et al. 2015:6)

With their research focus on what they call the "relational perspective" and the change of social relations caused by SI initiatives, they do not set any specific data-analysis method in their methodological guidelines for case studies but ask each case to include actors and relations mapping and a timeline of processes and dynamics over time (Wittmayer et al. 2015:13-16). Still, there is a certain limitation to using TRANSIT case studies for analyzing multi-stakeholder processes of SI initiatives as to how they lead to macro-level societal change. First, the boundary of each case study is limited within an individual SI network (such as Ashoka network) and its national or local organizations. It is not very clear how such cases impacted transformative change in broader social contexts. Second, they pay more attention to "patterns, phases and turning points than to causes and factors" (Haxeltine et al. 2015:6), for the sake of using the results also for "quasi-quantitative comparative meta-analysis"[45] (Wittmayer et al. 2015:4) of

---

[44] Probably it is a bit insensitive to list King, Keohane, and Verba (1994) together with the others, since this study relies more on the methodology of using qualitative research for a limited number of cases to investigate in-depth causal processes, as argued in George and Bennett (2005) and Brady and Collier (2010), rather than that of "KKV" to increase the number of cases to increase the persuasive power of the discussion. However, I shall leave this in to express my appreciation for what I have learnt from their debates.

[45] As Pel et al. (2017:3-4) explains, this "quali-quantitative" approach has been intentionally taken to "move beyond anecdotal evidence" and to explain the processes through relational perspectives as a collective achievement, rather than "decomposing it into factors and causes."

"critical turning points"[46] (Pel et al. 2017:3-4, Figure 1.11). This seems to be sound reasoning for their research design, but as a result, they had to leave the causal linkage in a black box, and to state in their final Practice Brief that the "explanations for how processes of institutional change are unfolding in contemporary examples of transformative social innovation" are "an ongoing research challenge" (Haxeltine et al. 2017:15).

Figure 1.11 Excerpt from a Critical Turning Point Timeline
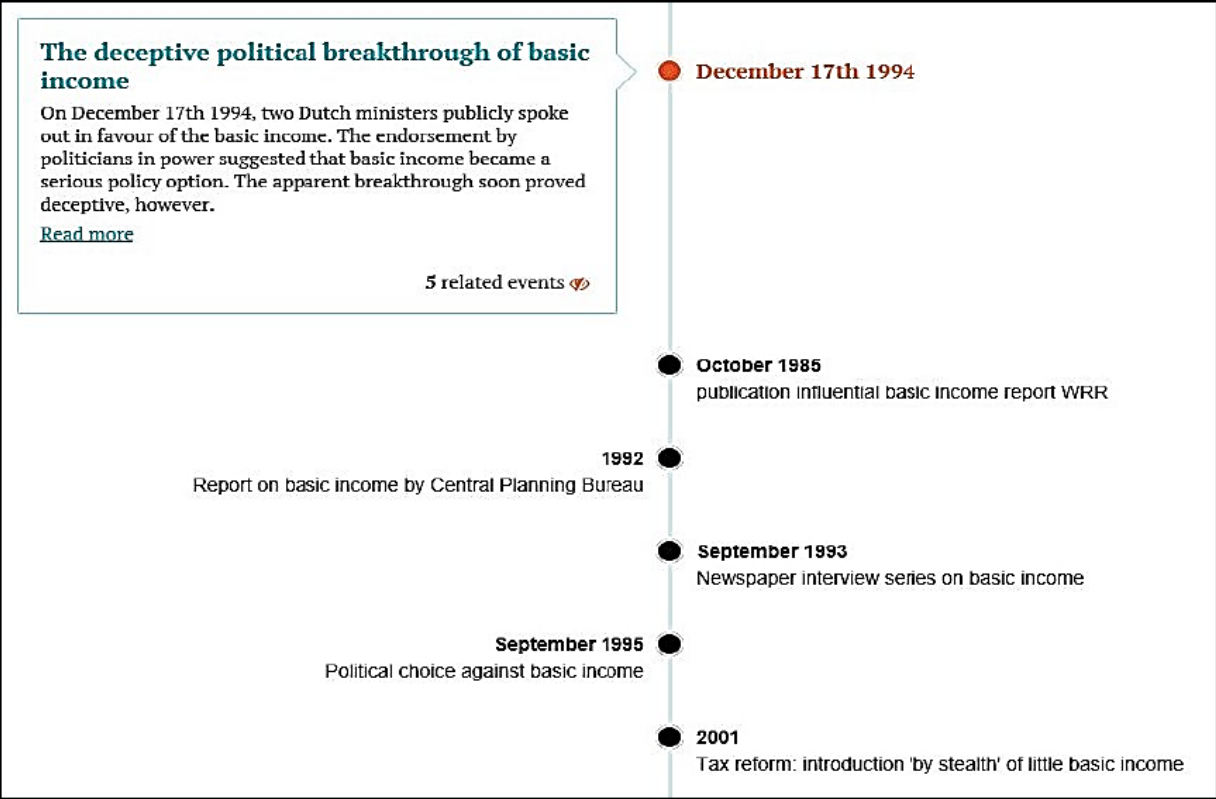
Source: Pel et al. (2017:5)

Also, as described above, Westley and her group have conducted case study analyses of SI initiatives. Their historical analysis presents examples of how SI initiatives can lead to macro level impact on societal rules, behaviors, and values. This is quite a unique and valuable contribution to empirically

---

[46] The "crucial turning points" are what they define as "moments or events in processes at which initiatives undergo or decide a change of course" (Pel et al. 2017:4).

linking the micro level, when an SI initiative starts as a marginalized and peripheral movement, and the macro level or systemic change. However, they tend to focus on the description of the roles of individual persons, organizations and events, and omit any clarification or analysis of the structural relationships between different sectors / groups (such as industries, public authorities, or citizens) within these interactions and negotiations.

This study positions an individual nation as the basic unit of analysis, although it does not preclude the possibility of having sub-national regions with distinct cultural / historic distinctiveness such as the Basque region in Spain or Okinawa in Japan, or any rural community with a different local context compared to a megalopolis capital. The target countries for case study are China, Indonesia, Japan, and South Korea. These countries have been selected to compare the mechanisms caused by different contexts in governmental systems, socio-economic conditions, and cultural settings.[47] It may also help to investigate whether there is room for typological theorizing, or some common patterns for some sub-categories of SI processes, such as in developed-country or developing country contexts, or with specific issues (George and Bennett 2005:235-236).

The main criteria for case selection are first, that the cases selected are cross-sectoral and do not consist of a single issue, to avoid being unduly constrained by the specific systems and contexts of certain sectors (for example, the medical care or education systems) – because of this criterion, we had to abandon many interesting initiatives, such as remote care services or online education. Second, cases which can be used by other countries as a reference, or in other words are not too context-driven, are selected – for example, Muslim philanthropy in Indonesia which is based on religious beliefs and traditions, or the Long-term Care Insurance system in Japan which is based on a considerable amount of financial outlay, had to be

---

[47] These four countries have different levels of economic development, political systems, and typologies of nation-society relationships. Inoguchi (2014:88-96) categorizes Japan and Indonesia as [weak state – strong society] while China and South Korea belong to the [strong state – strong society] category. They were also selected because of the Author's professional experience (as an NGO / UNDP / foundation staff member working mainly in Northeast and Southeast Asia) and familiarity with these countries.

dropped. Even Singapore as a country had to be skipped due to its unique characteristics as a city-state and its governance and welfare schemes. Thirdly, cases that have already been in place for some time were chosen instead of on-going ones, so that we can evaluate the scaling processes as ones that are time-tested – again, we had to drop some of the interesting "latest" cases such as bicycle sharing or electronic payment platforms. Finally, since the study is based on a meta-analysis of primary and secondary literature, the availability of documents mainly in English or Japanese was a major concern. Thailand was another country passed over in this study due to this particular issue.[48]

It is obvious that increasing the number of countries will add a heavy burden on the study. And the diversity in political systems, economies, and cultural contexts in Asia makes the comparison even more challenging than the comparison of industrialized countries, as often done in the study of welfare regimes. However, it is also useful to compare SI processes in different countries to avoid getting too "embedded" in country- or issue-specific systems, historic paths, and discourses. Methodology-wise, it can be helpful in developing a theory to compare the "most different systems" and identify some elements of commonalities among variables and outcomes – to quote Przeworski and Teune: "If the relationship between an independent and the dependent variable is the same within the subgroups of the population, then again the systemic differences need not be taken into consideration" (Ito 2013:4; Meckstroth 1975:137; Przeworski and Teune 1970:35).

The cases that meet the criteria of considerable breadth beyond issues or sectors are the Non-profit Organizations (NPOs) in Japan, social organizations in China, social economy in South Korea, and governmental decentralization in Indonesia. For Japan, two additional sectoral cases (environmental pollution and community-based integrated care for the elderly) have been added to look further for the

---

[48] I have to admit that one of the major limitations of this study is that documents in national languages (Chinese, Korean, and Bahasa Indonesia) could not be used to conduct the case analyses, and I look forward to receiving any feedback based on informational sources which I did not have access to. However, I am grateful for being able to use and benefit from the literature written by a number of scholars and practitioners, including ones written in Japanese.

details of SI scaling mechanisms.

The study was carried out in a three-step process. First, it conducts an analysis of the scaling

processes of each individual SI case by using the following analytic framework (Table 1.3) to describe the

four stages of SI and the roles of the different sectors (governments, businesses, and civil society)[49] in each

stage.

Table 1.3 Analytical Framework Used for Case Analysis

Actor / Stage	Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutional-ization
Government	- -	- -	- -	- -
Business	- -	- -	- -	- -
Civil society	- -	- -	- -	- -

Developed by the author

◯ minor / ◯ : major involvement from each sector

☁ : new ideation

✶ : conflict with the initiative

▭ : legislation (central / local levels)

▢ : multi-sectoral alliance

The main source of information used for the case analyses is the meta-analysis of primary and

secondary source documents. Primary sources include documents authored by the organizations and

---

[49] The definitions and boundaries of these three sectors are indistinct, depend on social and historical contexts, and are ever-changing – some of the various examples includes: grant-making foundations or financial institutions set up by governmental funding; community or religious organizations under strong control and support from the government; corporations claiming CSR (corporate social responsibility), CSV (creating shared value), or SRI (socially responsible investment) activities within or beyond their business boundaries; and "social economy" institutions which pursue both economic and social purposes (Prewitt 2006:356). In this study, social businesses / social enterprises / cooperatives / nonprofits which conduct business activities but hold social causes as their primary mission are included in civil society (or the "social sector," as it is increasingly being called).

individuals involved, such as reports, websites, and other social media. It may also include archival

materials when accessible. Secondary sources include documents written by external authors, including

monographs, academic papers, reports, and media articles on specific social issues, policies, or initiatives.

Documents relevant to other issues, discourses, and academic discussions are included as well as literature

specifically focusing on SI. Additionally, direct interviews with relevant academics and practitioners are

used to supplement and triangulate the information. In other words, each case study in this study attempts

to reconstruct the chronological and causal lineages of each initiative from the perspective of SI process

development by using existing literature and other available materials.

Then as the second step, the study tests the following variables and hypotheses in each case as a

causal process observation, asking whether we can say that the SI process succeeded or failed to scale

because of these specific variables: i) whether the SI process was top-down or bottom-up; ii) whether there

was a proliferation of multi-sectoral "alliances"; iii) whether the issue was recognized by a society as a

major social priority or a crisis; iv) whether the SI initiative received support from existing business

sectors, or whether a new sector was developed; v) whether a strong civil society and/or social movement

was involved in the process; vi) other variables that had a causal relationship on the outcome of whether the

SI process ultimately had a macro-level impact in the society or not[50] (Table 1.4):

Table 1.4 List of Independent Variables and Hypotheses Used for Case Analysis

Variables	Hypotheses
i) Scale-up (top-down) SI process or scale-out (diffusion) SI process or both	• Successful SI process happens when there is a scale-up (top-down) policy
	• Successful SI process happens when there is a bottom-up diffusion process
	• Successful SI process happens when there are both top-down

---

[50] Benett (2010:210-211) shows a way to test the strength of causation in process tracing by using the "hoop" test, "straw in the wind" test, "smoking gun" test, and "doubly decisive" test, by measuring whether a hypothesis is necessary / sufficient to establish causation.

	policy and bottom-up diffusion processes
ii) Multi-sectoral "alliances" established and proliferated on different levels or the lack thereof	• Successful SI process happens when there is a multi-sectoral "alliance" formed at the central (national) level • Successful SI process happens when there is a multi-sectoral "alliance" formed at the local level • Successful SI process happens when there are multi-sectoral "alliances" formed both at the central and local levels
iii) Social consensus (or high priority) or remaining a marginal issue	• Successful SI process happens when social concern about the issue is high
iv) Support and cooperation from existing business sectors (or development of a new business sector) or the lack thereof	• Successful SI process happens when the mainstream business sectors (with pressure from a majority of consumers) start to cooperate, or when a new business sector emerges
v) Strong civil society and/or social movement or the lack thereof	• Successful SI process happens when there is a strong civil society sector and/or a social movement
vi) Other factors	• Political regimes (authoritarian / democratic) • Technologies or methodologies • The level of decentralization • Gender empowerment and equality

Developed by the author

Among other variables, this study pays particular attention to two factors. First is whether the initiative started as a "top-down" or a "bottom-up" process. There is a strong scholarly tradition which focuses on the authoritarian nature of Asian politics, by using different terms including "Asian values"[51] or

---

[51] "Asian values" refers to hierarchical and collective values in Asian societies often connected to Confucianism, and justifies governments' interventionist policies in economic and other areas. It became a strong discourse in the post-Cold War environment in the 1990s when East Asian countries developed as economic powers, and is often used to emphasize the heterogeneity between the Western and Asian societies, both from Asian speakers (like Lee Kuan-Yew) and external observers (Bell 2006; World Bank 1993:83-84, 158-159).

"developmental state" (Chu et al. 2008:8-9; Inoguchi and Carlson 2006:4-8; Vatikiotis 1996:93; Williams 2016:29-30). On the other hand, there is another group of authors who emphasize the democratic and grass-root processes (such as "third-wave" democracies or participative development) since the democratization of Northeast and Southeast Asian countries in the 1980s and 1990s (Bell 2006:7-8; Huntington 1995:22; Kelly et al. 2012:33; Morris-Suzuki 2017:9-10). This study examines whether the "strongmen" types of politicians or "competent government officials" (World Bank 1993:94) could impose SI initiatives and deep-rooted societal changes, or more grassroot-oriented initiatives can do so.

Second is the existence and proliferation of multi-sectoral "alliances" at different levels. Here we need to clarify what multi-sectoral "alliance" means in this thesis. A vast amount of SI or social movement literature have spoken previously about multi-sector cooperation, partnership, or collaboration. Still, the difference of types or governance mechanisms within such cooperative efforts have been touched upon by only a few of them (Lyon 2012:139, 151; Van Dyke and McCammon 2010). While these types of partnerships establish the assumption (often unconsciously) that stakeholders from different sectors share a common goal and that they will cooperate to achieve that goal, and have been jokingly described as "hollow rhetoric" by Lyon, (Park 2016:141-142), this paper refers to partnerships or relationships between stakeholders from different sectors that may or may not share values, interests, or goals but which still work to push an initiative forward, as an "alliance." The nature of such "alliances" is fairly open, less hierarchical and interdependent and often lacks formal negotiation between stakeholders, therefore each stakeholder acts based on their own values and interests.[52] Even when each shareholder is pursuing their own interest, this kind of "alliance" can help to push an SI initiative forward.

Although the idea of such an "alliance" originally comes from the scholars of local governance and network governance theory (Kooiman 2003; Rhodes 1997; Sorensen and Torfing 2006; Tsujinaka

---

[52] By its characteristics, the "alliance" is closer to what is called an "Issue Network," rather than the more official "Policy Network" or "Policy Community" defined by Rhodes (1997:38), but it should be differentiated since an "Issue Network" lacks the momentum to push specific initiatives to a certain outcome.

2010), the term "alliance" is (strangely) taken from *Politics among Nations*, a classic of International

Politics written by Hans J. Morgenthau. Morgenthau defined an alliance as a "function of the balance of

power operating within a multiple-state system", and shows that an alliance can be formed not only when

the parties share a common interest or ideology, but also simply to meet their own interests without any

moral considerations, taking the example of changes in political alignments during the Thirty Years' War

(Morgenthau 1968:175-183).[53] This thesis uses the word "alliance" to clarify that it appreciates different

forms of partnerships or relationships, including cases of stakeholders competing for resources, or conflicts

between different sectors that consequently push a process forward as "alliances," and analyzes how the

formation of such "alliances" on the central or local level affects the processes.[54]

Combining two variants results in four domains divided by two axes (Figure 1.12) that will be

used later to identify which process can cause an SI initiative to scale.

Figure 1.12 Four Domains of Top-Down / Bottom Up and the Formation of "Alliances"
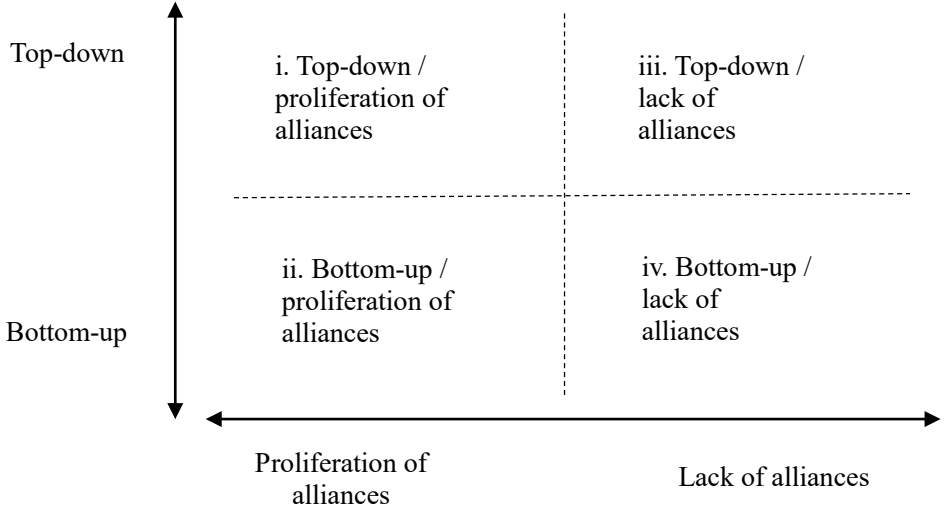
Source: Developed by the author

---

[53] There is another group of management literature that mentions "alliance" as a voluntary relationship between autonomous and independent organizations / firms to achieve objectives, by mainly sharing or creating resources such as joint ventures, purchase partners, research and development partnerships, among others (Robinson and Stuart 2007; Tjemkes and Burgers 2012; Yasuda 2016), but this thesis does not apply this meaning to alliance.
[54] This definition of "alliance" also corresponds to what Westley (2017:247) called "unusual partners," which are partnerships of stakeholders with different values, ideals, or interests that still drive the initiative.

After the case studies and hypothesis testing, as the third step, the study attempts to conduct a cross-case analysis to see patterns in causality. It merits early acknowledgement that the scope of this research is not limited to finding a general rule in which one of the variables will always lead to the institutionalization of SI initiatives. Literature on complexity theory warns us that the causal mechanisms of social phenomena cannot be described by such linear relationships and should be understood as interactions of intentions and actions (Byrne and Callaghan 2014:173; Jervis 1997:17, 35-39). And different culture and contexts, including historical "path-dependency" make such a "one-size-fits-all" understanding and prescription even less useful.[55] However, this study does not claim any sort of "representativeness" or to increase the inferential leverage by increasing the number of samples or issues, and prioritizes providing a limited number of in-depth analyses (Brady et al. 2010:23-24). Therefore, we should be aware that there may be different patterns of causal relationships that could be found by this study, including (George and Bennett 2005:157; Ragin 1993:44-46): i) one of the above variables causes macro-level impact of the SI process, or it contributes to it. For example, when variable A is present, result R happens (R=A), ii) a combination of more than two of the above variables causes macro-level impact of the SI process, or they contribute to it. For example, when variables B, C, and D are all present, R happens (R=BCD); or when E is present and F is not present, R happens (R=Ef), and iii) equifinality / multiple causality: A different set of causalities may lead to the same result, like different "paths" leading to the same goal. For example, either variable G (either as itself, or as a combination with other variables) or H (same) leads to a macro-level impact of the SI process (R=G+H).

Finally, this study aims to clarify some of the causal mechanisms created by the interaction of different societal sectors in the SI processes, and how such initiatives do or do not have impact on the

---

[55] We should also be aware that the meaning for some concepts or variables, for example "democratic" or "bottom-up" processes, can be difficult to measure and even mean quite different things, depending on which context or country we are looking at (George and Bennett 2005:19).

macro level. By doing so, it seeks to contribute to the middle-range theory which can explain the

mechanisms under some certain circumstances, and possibly to provide some policy implications to scale

the SI processes that are needed in society.

1.4 Structure of the Thesis

The structure of this thesis is as follows. Chapters two to five provide country case studies for Japan, China,

South Korea, and Indonesia after providing a brief summary of country contexts that affect the case study

processes. Chapter six presents some main findings and discussions from the case studies and cross-country

analysis, policy implications, and conclusion.

Chapter 2: Japan

2.1 Country Context

Japan was the first among Asian countries to achieve rapid economic development after WWII. While the post-war political, economic, and social systems were based until the 1980s on the close integration of the ruling Liberal Democratic Party (LDP), central ministries, and industries and businesses, social movements and volunteer activities were marginalized, if not regarded with suspicion by the mainstream. Despite this, problems that arose from Japan's rapid economic growth and societal changes such as environmental pollution, a rapidly aging society, and the changing employment and family structures grew and needed to be addressed, which led to some major SI attempts.

2.1.1 Political System

The modernization and nationalistic expansion of Japan which had been taking place since the late 19th century came to an end with its defeat in WWII in August 1945 (Masumi 2005:1-13).[1] Until 1952, Japan was under the occupation of the General Headquarters of the U.S.-led Allied Forces. Major political and economic reforms took place in this short period to transform the highly centralized political-industrial-military structure of pre-war Imperial Japan. Some of the major changes were i) disarmament, ii) enacting of a democratic and pacifist Constitution, iii) universal suffrage, iv) decentralization and introduction of elected local government heads and representatives, iv) agrarian reform, v) enactment of the Labor Union Act, and vi) dissolution of *zaibatsu* (conglomerates) (Fukunaga 2014:44-45, 65-74, 79-107; Noguchi 2015:71-72).[2]

---

[1] As a result of the surrender, Japan lost its overseas territories and colonies, including Taiwan, the Korean Peninsula, Mainland China, and the South Pacific Mandate. The Okinawan islands were under U.S. occupation until 1972.

[2] Still, due to the continuity of politicians and bureaucrats and the shift of U.S. policy to using Japan as part of

However, the initial momentum behind democratization and reforms weakened, especially after the outbreak of the Korean War and the intensification of the Cold War. And from 1955, the pro-U.S. Liberal Democratic Party (LDP) held continuous power until 1993. Opposition parties including the Socialist Party of Japan and the Japanese Communist Party held roughly one third of parliamentary seats. Partly because the number of staff in central government ministries is small compared to other developed countries, the LDP politicians, ministerial bureaucrats, and businesses or interest groups formed alliances for individual policy areas, such as agriculture, medical care, construction, or education (Inoguchi and Fujii 2011:153; Muramatsu 1994; Shinoda 2011). As a result, LDP politicians, ministries in charge of specific issues, and interest groups (such as agricultural cooperatives, medical associations, industrial lobbying groups, or neighborhood associations) formed alliances to distribute subsidies and projects to the supporters of the LDP government in a system which lasted until the 1970s (Masumi 2005:25-26; Saito 2010:33-40; Tsujinaka 2012b:273).

Since the 1990s, ruling party coalitions have changed over time, but since 2012, the LDP has come back into power with its minority partner Komeito. Some authors point out that after the electoral reforms of 1994 and the Koizumi administration (2002-2006), the Prime Minister and the Prime Minister's Office (now the Cabinet Office) centralized power in terms of policy development (Estevez-Abe 2008; Rosenbluth and Thies 2010; Uchiyama 2010).

There are two levels of local government in Japan, which are the forty-seven prefectural level governments and the now 1,718 municipalities (cities, towns, villages, and wards).[3] Local governments have the power to set their own bylaws and account for around seventy-five percent of public spending. However, since more than two thirds of the total tax income belongs to the central government, projects are

---

the Western camp in the Cold War situation, there was continuity between pre- and post-war Japanese economic policies, industrial structure, and the members of the ruling groups (Noguchi 2015:7-14; Yui 2016:267-268).

[3] "Cross-boundary Administration [*Kouiki Gyousei* 広域行政] page, Ministry of Internal Affairs and Communication website: http://www.soumu.go.jp/kouiki/kouiki.html (In Japanese, retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

commissioned by the central ministries with subsidies to local governments (Muramatsu et al. 2001).[4]

Mainly in urban areas in the 1960s and 1970s, the opposition won local government head elections, and

some of the so-called "progressive municipalities" implemented their own welfarist policies such as free

medical care in Tokyo in the early 1970s (Estevez-Abe 2008:139; Okada 2016; Tsujinaka 2003).

2.1.2 Socio-Economic Conditions

The post-war Japanese economy showed remarkable growth after the mid-1950s, and the annual rate of real

economic growth stayed at around ten percent for nearly twenty years until the early 1970s.[5] This was the

result of several factors, including i) a high personal savings rate, ii) the sufficient provision of labor force

from rural areas, iii) a favorable international environment for trade and foreign exchange, iv) technological

innovation, and v) export-oriented industrialization (Sawai and Tanimoto 2016:368-373; Yashiro 2017:21-

32). It slowed after the oil shocks in the 1970s,[6] and after the burst of the so-called "bubble economy" in

1991, economic growth and other performance indicators stayed stagnant or fell (Noguchi 2015:289-295).

During this period of economic growth, the role of the government in social welfare services was

rather limited, and public social expenditure as a percent of the GDP was only 3.5 percent in 1960, much

lower than other OECD countries.[7] It was supplemented by family and corporations, such as children

living together with (or sending money to) elderly parents, provision of care by female members of the

family, corporate medical insurance and hospitals, retirement allowance and pensions, and housing (Ochiai

2013:87-90; Sawai and Tanimoto 2016:418-419; Ueno 2011:116-119). In 1961, the national pension and

---

[4] According to the 2006 AsiaBarometer survey, Japanese people show relatively higher trust in local governments, with 53.7 percent saying they trust local governments "very much" or "to some extent," compared to 42.0 percent saying the same for the central government (Inoguchi and Fujii 2011:156).

[5] 8.8 percent (1955-60), 9.2 percent (1960-65), and 11.1 percent (1965-70) (Sawai and Tanimoto 2016:369).

[6] The annual real GDP growth rate fell to 5.7 percent in 1976-78, and 4.0 percent in 1981-91 (Yashiro 2017:36).

[7] For example, expenditure rates in other countries were 9.7% in the United Kingdom, 12.0% in France, 15.4% in Germany, and 10.7% in Italy. OECD Social Expenditure Update, OECD Social Expenditure Database website: http://www.oecd.org/els/soc/OECD2016-Social-Expenditure-Update-Figures-Data.xlsx (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

health insurance system was introduced (Kim 2014:245-259), but the benefit level was kept moderate. Even in 1990, public social expenditure amounted to only 11.1 percent of the GDP, which was much lower than other OECD countries including France (24.3 percent), Germany (21.4 percent), or Italy (20.7 percent).[8]

Along with economic growth, the aging of the population advanced rapidly. The proportion of the population over age sixty-five reached seven percent in 1971, but it took only twenty-four years to double to 14 percent, and now 33.9 million, or 26.6 percent of the population of 127 million is over age sixty-five, which makes Japan the most aged country in the world. Together with the movement of the younger generation to urban areas, a number of rural communities are facing the danger of not being able to sustain the community with an isolated and aged population (Masuda 2014).

This trend of rapid aging brought significant changes to public social welfare spending. As Figure 2.1 shows, in 1981 pensions became the top category in terms of social spending by category, and in 2015 it reached JPY 54.9 trillion (approx. USD 500 billion), or 10.3 percent of the GDP. Medical care is JPY 37.7 trillion (approx. USD 350 billion) or 7.1 percent of the GDP. Long-term care, included in welfare, is JPY 9.4 trillion (approx. USD 86 billion) or 1.8 percent of the GDP (National Institute of Population and Social Security Research 2017:10). Even compared to the OECD average, Japan spends 23.1 percent for social expenditure in 2016, which is higher than the OECD average of twenty-one percent, and close to other developed countries.[9] This shows that Japan's public social welfare has grown rapidly within these twenty-plus years, largely as a response to its aging population. However, Japan lacks a stable tax income to cover the expenditure, and it has resulted in serious governmental deficits. The accumulated gross governmental debt now reaches 230 percent of the GDP as of 2015 (Aoo 2017; Estevez-Abe 2008:291; Yashiro 2017:151). Another consequence of rapid aging and the burst of the "bubble economy" is relatively poor employment conditions such as an increase of part-time employees and scarce social welfare services

---

[8] Source: same as above.
[9] OECD Social Expenditure Database website. France 31.5 percent, Germany 25.3 percent, Italy 28.9 percent.

provided for the younger generation compared to their parents and grandparents' generations (Inoguchi and Fujii 2011:153).

Figure 2.1 Social Benefits in Japan by Category (Fiscal Year 1970-2015)
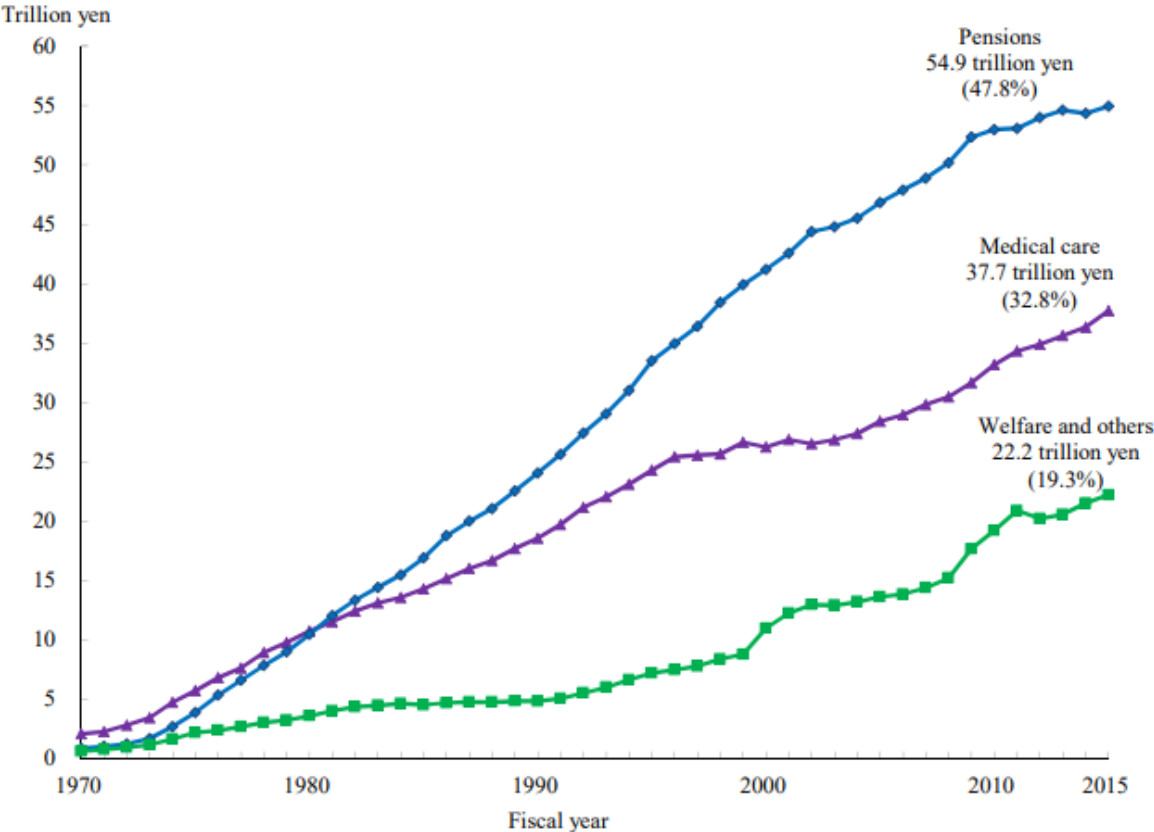
Source: National Institute of Population and Social Security Research (2017:11)

2.1.3 Civil Society and Social Movements

Local communities and mutual-help social groups have functioned as a traditional safety net since the pre-modern era (Najita 2009). In modern Japan, the state exerted strong control over social organizations, but an "associational revolution" took place after the 1940s and 1950s, due to the freedom of association set by the post-war Constitution and increasing waves of labor and social movements. In addition to pre-war associations like neighborhood associations and charitable foundations, new types of organizations such as membership associations, labor unions, cooperatives, corporate foundations, religious organizations,

medical services corporations, and social welfare cooperatives developed under different laws (Tsujinaka 2003; Tsujinaka et al. 2010).

Social movements were also strong in the post-war period until the 1970s, but these were regarded with suspicion and marginalized from the government and mainstream businesses (Kawato et al. 2011). However, in the 1990s, volunteer activities received attention after the 1995 the Great Hanshin Earthquake, and it led to the enactment of the 1998 Specific Non-profit Activities Promotion Act (so-called "NPO Law") and creating a legal status for nonprofit organizations [*Tokutei Hieiri Katsudou Houjin 特定非営利活動法人*] , which are called "NPOs" in Japan (Estevez-Abe 2003; Yamaoka 1999).[10] During the time of the non-LDP coalition government led by the Democratic Party of Japan (DPJ) from 2009 to 2012, there was an attempt to utilize NPOs and other civil society organizations to take over more of governmental services under the name of "New Public" (Tanaka 2011:246-262) but was mostly abandoned after the restoration of the LDP government in 2012.

Following a major reform of Public Interest Corporations [*Koueki Houjin 公益法人*] systems in 2008, according to the Japan Association of Charitable Organizations (2013), there were 47,771 NPOs, 47,825 Medical Services Corporations [*Iryou Houjin 医療法人*], 19,498 Social Welfare Corporations [*Shakai Fukushi Houjin 社会福祉法人*], 5,543 Private School Corporations [*Gakkou Houjin 学校法人*], and 19,860 Public Interest Corporations (including Foundations and Associations with officially approved tax-exemption status), among others. However, Pekkanen points out the shortage of professional capacity in Japanese nonprofits, particularly that only a few professional nonprofit organizations are participating in advocacy or policymaking activities (Pekkanen 2006).

---

[10] In 2008 the Civil Code was revised, and new laws were created to greatly ease the regulations on establishing associations and foundations.

2.2 Case Analysis 1: Non-Profit Organization (NPO)[11]

2.2.1 Background

Here we review the history of voluntary non-governmental organizations in modern Japan. In pre-WWII Japan, based on the 1896 Civil Code, each private nonprofit organization (Associations [*Shadan Houjin* 社団法人] or Foundations [*Zaidan Houjin* 財団法人]) needed to have a supervisory government authority and to follow its instructions, including the details of its operational areas and activities. This did not change even after WWII, but with special laws, other legal entities were made possible such as Social Welfare Corporations [*Shakai Fukushi Houjin* 社会福祉法人], Private School Corporations [*Gakkou Houjin* 学校法人], Medical Corporations [*Iryou Houjin* 医療法人], and Religious Corporations [*Shuukyou Houjin* 宗教法人], among others. But after the 1960s, "voluntary activities" in various fields became popular (Nagashima 2016:76; Nihei 2011). This was made possible by the increasing numbers of middle-class citizens including educated women and students, and the leisure time created by economic growth and a modern lifestyle. Volunteers identified issues in local communities such as persons with disabilities, environmental issues, child and elderly care, and people with foreign backgrounds and started to provide social services themselves, going beyond protesting or filing petitions with the government. They pioneered the areas of support for refugees from the former Indochina region, international cooperation and development, environmental protection, and community-based social welfare activities, and in some areas including elderly care, started to become professionalized and receive fees for their service. The number of such groups was estimated to be around fifty to eighty thousand by the 1990s (Ushiro 2009:4; Yamaoka 1999:182).

However, these volunteers were unincorporated organizations without a judicial personality or

---

[11] In this section the abbreviation "NPO" is used to describe nonprofit organizations registered as a legal entity based on the 1998 Law to Promote Specified Nonprofit Activities Law, or so-called "NPO Law", which is also a term widely used in Japan for nonprofit organizations. Please note that when this article mentions "NPO", it does not include other nonprofit organization entities, such as foundations, associations, cooperatives, or social welfare organizations. But when it says "nonprofit organizations" it includes all of these private nonprofit organizations regardless of their registered legal entity.

tax exemption for donations. This caused a variety of problems including the group representative taking

unlimited personal liability, no clear governance standards as a corporation, inability to register for

international conferences, and a low level of recognition and trust from society. Against this backdrop,

some groups from the community development or performing art sectors started researching and visiting

the nonprofit sector in the United States and the voluntary sector in the United Kingdom. These members

and others have formed networks and organizations including the Japan Networkers' Conference in 1989.[12]

In 1994, the Nippon Institute for Research Advancement, a policy think-tank working with civil society

leaders, issued a report on civic nonprofit activities (NIRA 1994). Other key organizations were

established, including C's: An Association to Create Systems to Support Citizens' Activities in 1994, and

the Japan NPO Center in 1996 (Hayase and Matsubara 2004; Tsujimoto et al. 2000:12-15, 34).

In 1993, the LDP lost control of the central government for the first time in almost forty years but

soon returned in June 1994 by forming a triparty coalition with its long-time opponent the SDP and New

Party Sakigake, a party formed by ex-LDP liberals and some from the SDP, which continued until June

1998. By 1994, all major political parties other than JCP had a research group on NPOs or the nonprofit

sector.

On 17th January 1995, Western Japan was struck by the Great Hanshin Earthquake and while the

government failed to respond immediately, around 1.4 million citizen volunteers joined the rescue and

recovery activities and demonstrated their capability and expertise to the public. As a result, legislation to

support volunteer activities suddenly became a major policy agenda (Kojima 2003:77-78).

---

[12] Japan Networkers' Conference held a Networkers' Forum in October 1992, and discussed for the first time as a public meeting about the need to have a new legal entity for nonprofit organizations (e-mail from Yoshinori Yamaoka, dated 1st Oct. 2018).

2.2.2 Processes[13]

Soon after the Great Hanshin Earthquake, Chief Cabinet Secretary Igarashi made a statement indicating that the government was ready to create a framework to support volunteer activities. In February, the Inter-ministerial Coordination Meeting on Volunteer Issues led by the Economic Planning Agency was formed.[14] The aim of the Coordination Meeting was to develop a bill as cabinet legislation, which is a normal process in Japan. However, the MPs of the triparty coalition and the opposition New Frontier Party both worked with civil society leaders such as Mr. Akira Matsubara of C's and proposed legislation by MPs. Following the negotiation, cabinet legislation was abandoned and the Triparty NPO Project Team agreed on the outline of the "Citizens' Activities Support Bill" in December (Harada 2017:82). During this period, stakeholders from civil society increased as a result of local forums organized in different parts of Japan. Moreover, the focus of agenda has shifted from supporting volunteer activities to creating legislation to set up a legal status for citizens' activity organizations, based on the discussions between the MPs and civil society leaders (Kojima 2003:89-92).[15]

Later, the LDP proposed an amendment to the outline which was less favorable in terms of the accreditation of "public benefit" status and its limitations on cost recovery, but following the reaction from other two coalition partner parties, pressure from the Keidanren, the most powerful networks in the business sector, and civil society networks including C's, Performing Arts Network, Shimin-Rengo Volunteer Network, as well as the necessity to show a strong result in the election campaign against the newly formed Democratic Party of Japan, the LDP finally made a compromise (Harada 2017:83). The name of the bill was later amended to "Promote Specified Non-profit Activities" due to the opposition of

---

[13] For this section I greatly benefit from an extensive record of NPO Law establishment processes and the interviews of people involved which was archived and created by Machi-pot, a nonprofit organization: http://npolaw-archive.jp/ (In Japanese, retrieved 22nd Jun. 2018). The related documents are now in the National Archives of Japan.

[14] It included eighteen central ministries and governmental agencies.

[15] Interview with Noboru Hayase, Akira Matsubara, and Yoshinori Yamaoka, 15th Jul. 2011: http://npolaw-archive.jp/?page_id=35 (In Japanese, retrieved 22nd Jun. 2018).

some LDP MPs in the Upper House, but was finally enacted in March 1998, coming into effect the following December.

The Law to Promote Specified Non-profit Activities,[16] or the so-called "NPO Law," had some distinctive characteristics reflecting the discussion and negotiation that took place during the legislative process.[17] First, the Law created a framework to provide a legal status ("Specified Non-profit Activities Organization" or so-called "NPO Corporation") for nonprofit organizations, but had no provision for tax exemption for NPOs. Second, the nature of "public interest" was defined not as an organization, but as its activities ("specified nonprofit activities") in twelve different fields that can benefit an unspecified large number of people.[18] Third, it excluded organizations i) whose primary purposes were to disseminate religious teachings and/or promote political doctrine, or ii) who supported or opposed any candidate running for public office, any person holding public office, or any political party. Fourth, NPOs were mandated to apply for certification to prefectural level governments[19] (or the Economic Planning Agency, if operating in more than one prefecture). Fifth, prefectural governments were obligated to set their own bylaws for NPO certification, supervision, and information disclosure, instead of using a homogeneous standard created by the central government. Sixth, the processes of reviewing and taking necessary measures to make any adjustments was set in the Law to take place approximately three years after enforcement.

Some of these features, especially the limitation of activities, no setting of tax exemption, and the

---

[16] [*Tokutei Hieiri Katsudou Sokushin Hou* 特定非営利活動促進法 *(1998 年法律第 7 号)*] http://elaws.e-gov.go.jp/search/elawsSearch/elaws_search/lsg0500/detail?lawId=410AC1000000007 (In Japanese, Retrieved 23rd Jun. 2018).

[17] "Act on Promotion of Specified Non-profit Activities", Japanese Law Translation website: http://www.japaneselawtranslation.go.jp/law/detail/?id=3028&vm=04&re=01 (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[18] Twelve areas were specified in the 1998 Law, which are health and welfare, social education, community development, culture / art / sports, environmental protection, disaster relief, local security, human rights protection and peacebuilding, international cooperation, gender equality, child support, and support for other organizations. They have since been expanded to twenty areas (June 2018).

[19] Including Designated Cities.

restrictions on political and religious activities were compromises for civil society.[20] Still, it was an epoch-making achievement that the Law clearly recognized the role of citizens contributing to the good of the public, by the wording of "specified nonprofit activities carried out by citizens as free social contribution activities… contributing to enhancing public interest" in Article One (Purpose) (Kashiwagi 2008:16-17; Kojima 2003:165-166, 179).

As described above, the 1998 NPO Law prioritized creating a legal entity and did not put in place any tax exemption system for NPOs. But it established the reviewing and amendment process from the outset, which was done primarily to discuss tax exemption (Harada 2017:84). Both the Ministry of Finance, who was in charge of the taxation system, and the Economic Planning Agency were passive, but again a coalition of nonpartisan MPs and civil society leaders managed to pass the 2001 Revised Law. It set an "Approved Corporation" status which can enjoy tax benefits. Nevertheless, the benefits were limited in amount and the requirements, including testing for public support, were hard for most NPOs to fulfill (Kojima 2003:209-217). This was further eased by the 2011 Revised Law and the new Tax System for Donation under the DPJ-led coalition government.[21] Again, although the Tax Reform was presented by the Cabinet, the Revised NPO Law was presented by the nonpartisan NPO Parliamentary Group, maintaining the tradition of legislation process by nonpartisan MPs (Harada 2015:6; Kashiwagi 2008:144-152).

The NPO Law was enacted concurrently with the 2000 Decentralization Law [*Chihou Bunken Ikkatsu Hou* 地方分権一括法] which greatly increased the scope of work conducted by municipal-level governments, and the Long-term Care Insurance System [*Kaigo Hoken Seido* 介護保険制度] which began in 2000 (Ozaki 2001; Yamaoka 2001). Following these structural reforms, municipal governments

---

[20] Matsubara from C's later recalled that the civil society networks had to accelerate the legislative process by compromising, because the triparty coalition was expected to be terminated after the Upper House elections in July 1998. Interview with Noboru Hayase, Akira Matsubara, and Yoshinori Yamaoka, 15th Jul. 2011: http://npolaw-archive.jp/?page_id=35 (In Japanese, retrieved 22nd Jun. 2018).

[21] As a result of these reforms, 1,078 of 51,809 registered NPOs enjoy the tax benefits awarded as an "Approved Corporation" [*Nintei Tokutei Hieiri Katsudou Houjin* 認定特定非営利活動法人]as of April 2018 (Cabinet Office NPO Website: https://www.npo-homepage.go.jp/ (In Japanese, retrieved 24th Jun. 2018)).

outsourced their operations such as management and maintenance of public facilities and provision of social services to the private sector (Yamauchi 2002:42-44). NPOs provided a part of these outsourced services together with other for-profit businesses and nonprofit organizations (such as Social Welfare Organizations). Local governments also set bylaws and established NPO Support Centers to facilitate the cooperative structure and coordinate policies between the public sector and civic activities (Tsujimoto et al. 2000:18).[22]

The Long-term Elderly Care System in particular became a major income source for many NPOs. As the research conducted by the Economic Planning Agency which investigated 663 organizations registered as NPOs or applying for the status shows, forty-five percent worked primarily on health, medical or social welfare field (EPA 2000). In 2011, another study conducted by the Cabinet Office showed that the proportion of operational fees out of total income was 60.8 percent for all NPOs, but it occupied 74.6 percent for NPOs which had health, medical or social welfare field as their primarily operational field, highlighting these NPOs' dependence on public insurance systems especially of Long-term Care Insurance (Cabinet Office 2011:5).

In 2009, Prime Minister Hatoyama of the DPJ presented the "New Public Commons" as their policy, as "a new value to encourage people who join in the support of their neighbors in local communities and share the responsibility with the public sector, and to help those people as a whole society" (Harada 2015:4; Tanaka 2011:298-311). In January 2010, a New Public Roundtable was established, and in June the Proposals by the Roundtable and the Government Actions toward Their Institutionalization were announced.[23] The recommendations included reforms for tax deductions for donations to NPOs and

---

[22] Ms. Akiko Doumoto, who became the Governor of Chiba Prefecture after serving as an Upper House MP, was one of the local government heads eager to support collaboration with NPOs. Interview with Atsuko Doumoto, Yoshinori Yamaoka, and Toshio Tsuji: http://npolaw-archive.jp/?page_id=53 (In Japanese, retrieved 23rd Jun. 2018).

[23] Interestingly, one of the proposals made for governmental actions was to "propose social innovation models (for regulatory reform, public support, etc.) and consider building a scheme". "Proposals by the "New Public Commons" Roundtable and Government Actions toward Their Institutionalization", The New Public Roundtable page, The Cabinet Office website: http://www5.cao.go.jp/entaku/pdf/goverment-actions-english.pdf (page 7,

approval systems, along with support for social enterprises.[24] The subsequent Kan administration

introduced subsidies to create employment in the NPO and social enterprise sectors. Authors such as

Tanaka criticize this policy by stating that it could become pork-barrel politics without clear output goals,

create an unsustainable income hike for those sectors, and harm its "civic" characteristics (Tanaka

2011:258-261). Still, it is true that recently there is a strong interest in social enterprise, especially among

younger generations, which can utilize business approaches to solve social issues.

 Moreover, the 2008 Public Benefit Corporation reform amended the 1896 Civil Code and

allowed the general public to freely establish associations and foundations. This at least partly created an

overlap with NPO status, and the new legal entities of association and foundation were widely used after

the 2011 Great East Japan Earthquake and Tsunami for rescue and recovery activities (Japan NPO Research

Association 2017:21-24).

 According to the statistics from the Cabinet Office, the number of registered NPOs was over

26,000 in 2008 (Ushiro 2009), and exceeded 51,000 by the end of April 2018 (Figure 2.2).[25]

---

retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[24] At the moment (Sep. 2018), there is no specific legal status for social enterprises in Japan. So, when this section says "social enterprise," it means an organization which pursues both social causes and business profit, often as a business corporation (or in some case as a NPO).

[25] However, national newspaper The Mainichi Shimbun reported that around twelve percent of the NPOs they researched in Tokyo and another twenty cities are either not submitting reports to the local authorities or are inactive, and in some cases, a dormant NPO status was even sold to be used for illegal activities (*The Mainichi Shimbun* 4 Nov. 2018 "Some 12% of nonprofits in major Japan cities dormant, some used for crimes"). https://mainichi.jp/english/articles/20181104/p2a/00m/0na/015000c (Retrieved 6 Nov. 2018)

Figure 2.2 Number of Registered Non-Profit Organizations in Japan
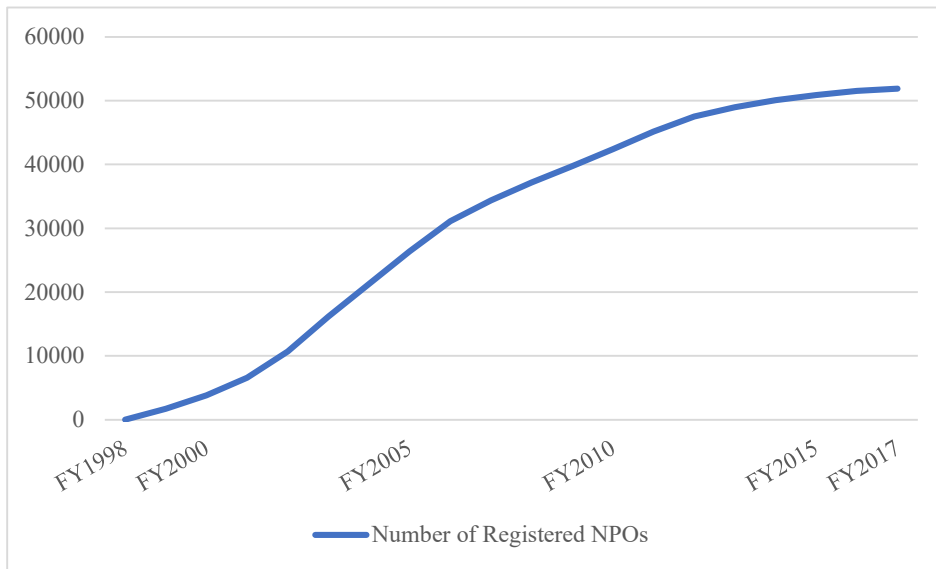
NPOs have grown into a sector of considerable size. The Japan Institute for Labour Policy and Training (JILPT) estimated that the economic value created by the paid and unpaid staff working for NPOs is equivalent to JPY 892 billion (USD 8 billion). As a single industry, this is higher than the mobile phone industry or nonlife (property) insurance industry (JILPT 2016:30-31). Another study surveyed 2,720 NPOs in 2015 on the year the organization was established (not the year they registered but the year in which they began their activities as a group), as shown in Table 2.1. It shows that 16.7 percent were operating before the establishment of the 1998 NPO Law, but the majority were established in the 2000s, especially in the period between 2000 and 2004.[27]

---

[26] The Number of Certified NPOs [*Tokutei Hieiri Katsudou Houjin no Nintei Suu no Suii* 特定非営利活動法人の認定数の推移], The Cabinet Office NPO website: https://www.npo-homepage.go.jp/about/toukei-info/ninshou-seni (In Japanese, retrieved 1st Jul. 2018)

[27] Weight is balanced between the three prefectures affected by the Great East Japan Earthquake and Tsunami and other areas (the same shall apply for the percentages hereinafter for the same study).

Table 2.1 The Years of Establishment of Non-Profit Organizations in Japan

Year the NPO was Established*	%
Before 1997	16.7%
1998-1999	6.5%
2000-2004	33.1%
2005-2009	20.3%
After 2010	17.2%

* The year NPOs started their activities, not registered year

Source: JILPT (2015:5)

In the same study, NPOs responded about their primary area of activities as shown in Table 2.2. Health, Medical and Social Welfare is the largest group, with 41.5 percent of NPOs responding with it as their primary area. Another question asked about the qualifications held by NPO staff, and the most common responses were (apart from driver's license) Certified Care Worker or Home Helper for the elderly care, which indicates that a number of NPOs are focusing on the provision of elderly care and other kinds of social welfare services (JILPT 2015:42). Still, according to a 2016 survey conducted by the Ministry of Health, Labour and Welfare, NPOs make up only five to six percent of home-based elderly care service providers or less than two percent of institutional care service providers, which is far less than other legal entities including Social Welfare Organizations, Medical Corporations, and for-profit companies (MoHLW 2016).

Table 2.2 Primary Activity Areas of Non-Profit Organizations in Japan

Primary Area of Activities	%
Health, Medical and Welfare	41.5%
Science, Culture, Arts and Sports	9.1%
Children	8.4%
Environmental Protection	7.5%
Community Development	6.9%

Source: JILPT (2015:6)

The annual income of NPOs in Fiscal Year 2013 is shown in Table 2.3. 35.5 percent (or 40.9 percent of respondents) reported that income was below JPY five million (USD 45,000), but the largest group had an income from JPY ten to thirty million (USD 90,000 to 270,000) with 17.6 percent (or 20.2 percent of respondents). 7.4 percent (or 8.4 percent of respondents) answered that they have an annual income of over JPY one hundred million (USD 900,000). Compared with the 2004 JILPT survey, NPOs reported larger incomes (JILPT 2015:5-11).[28]

According to the Cabinet Office study conducted in 2017, the average income of an NPO is JPY 32.33 million (USD 290,000) but the median is JPY 9.89 million (USD 90,000) which shows that a small number of the bigger organizations are pushing up the average while many stay small in terms of financial income (Cabinet Office 2018:24). The same survey showed that NPOs are relying on operational fees, by showing that 77.0 percent of total income comes from operational incomes, followed by 10.9 percent from grants and subsidies, 8.0 percent from donations, and 2.8 percent from membership fees (Figure 2.3). Many NPOs fail to obtain donations or membership fees from the public, and the median membership fee is JPY 63,000 (USD 570). Meanwhile, 37.1 percent of NPOs with Approved Corporation status (tax exemption benefit for donations) and 53.5 percent of non-approved NPOs have no income from donations (Cabinet

---

[28] Still, the income of NPOs is relatively small. Ushiro (2009:5-10, 200) blames the NPO leaderships' mindsets which tend to consider "being a small organization as a value" and claims that NPOs should seek stronger partnerships with the public sector.

Office 2018:21, 27-28). This corresponds with Tanaka (2008:28), who claims that the majority of NPOs do not raise money through donations.

Table 2.3 Annual Income of Non-Profit Organizations in Japan (Fiscal Year 2013)

Annual Income in FY2013	%
0	5.6%
0-1 million yen	14.0%
1-5 million yen	15.9%
5-10 million yen	9.4%
10-30 million yen	17.6%
30-50 million yen	8.6%
50-100 million yen	8.7%
Over 100 million yen	7.4%
No answer	12.9%

Source: JILPT (2015a:6)

Figure 2.3 Income Breakdown for Japanese Non-Profit Organizations
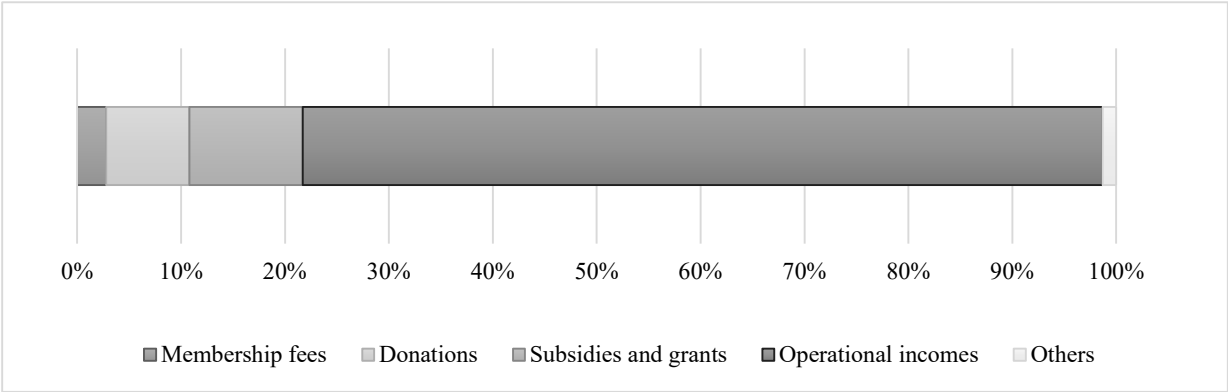
Source: Cabinet Office (2018:27)

By comparing JILPT (2004) and JILPT (2015), we can see that the number of staff working for NPOs are increasing, both paid and unpaid. The percentage of paid staff in the organization (from 17.3 percent to 20.3 percent) and average number of paid staff (from 4.45 to 9.13) both increased during this period (JILPT 2015:10-11). However, the paid staff in NPOs usually receive a lower salary compared to

other industries. JILPT (2015:8) indicates that the typical annual income of paid NPO staff is JPY two to three million (USD 18,000 to 27,000). The next group is from JPY one to two million (USD 9,000 to 18,000).[29] JILPT (2015:10) shows that the typical number of paid full-time staff for an NPO is between one and four (57.7 percent) and the average is 3.09, but the median is zero. Also, 48.1 percent of NPOs have between one and four part-time staff members, with an average of 6.04 and a median of one (Table 2.4). These figures show a picture that apart from a few large-scale organizations, NPOs operate by heavily relying on the work done by volunteers and unpaid board members.

Table 2.4 Japanese Non-Profit Organization Headcounts by Type of Employment / Participation

Types	Average (persons)	Median (persons)	Standard Deviation
Board Members	8.70	7	6.1
Paid Board Members	0.77	0	1.6
Full-time Staff	3.09	0	6.4
Part-time Staff	6.04	1	17.6
Paid Volunteers	4.42	0	29.8
Unpaid Volunteers (Secretariat)	0.85	0	2.1
Unpaid Volunteers (Others)	21.09	0	176.5
Interns	0.59	0	6.0

Source: JILPT (2015:10)

One of the significant changes caused by the establishment of the NPO Law was the change in how Japanese society views the civic nonprofit activities. During the Cold War period, the word "citizens' movement" had an anti-governmental or anti-establishment image, partly because of their involvement in anti-war movements and protests against environmental pollution, and was generally avoided by the government and business sectors. It was first used with a positive meaning with slightly different wording in 1972, when the Tokyo Metropolitan government under Governor Ryokichi Minobe set up the "Citizen

---

[29] The majority of respondents for the individual questionnaires were the secretary generals of the NPOs, so the result may be showing a higher income than the salaries of general NPO paid staff (JILPT 2015:8).

Activity Service Corner" [*Shimin Katsudou Saabisu Koonaa* 市民活動サービスコーナー] (Nagashima 2016:76; Nakamura 2000:32). Yamaoka, then a program officer at the Toyota Foundation, started a "Documentation of Citizen Activities" sub-program in 1984 as a part of the Foundation's Research Grant Program, and it became an independent program called the "Grant Program for Citizen Activities" in 1986. Still, the word was not in common use (Toyota Foundation 2007:154-155).[30]

Also, the NPO Law was initially called the "Law to Promote Citizens' Activity" but after a debate with conservative LDP members in the Upper House, the name was changed to the "Law to Promote Specific Non-profit Activity." Those LDP members took issue both with the use of the term "citizen" and also with who would define "public benefit." The NPO Law finally accepting the citizen's initiative to define "public benefit" from their side was a major turning point, as this had traditionally been dominated by the government. Atsuko Doumoto, who was an MP in the Upper House from Sakigake during the legislation process, said that "The NPO Law had characteristics that changed the fundamental structure of Japanese society. The shift from a government-led system to an egalitarian democracy of citizens, or something of that kind. The conservative MPs at that time sensed this and were opposed to it."[31]

What civil society leaders like Yamaoka and Matsubara were feeling through the legislation process of the NPO Law was a "change of the times," and the "sense that the citizen and civil society are starting to come to the forefront in Japan." The processes of legislation, information disclosure and media coverage, and fora in different parts of Japan brought about a change of social cognition to see NPOs – who are not subject to any authority – as something positive, or "good" (Yamaoka 1999:82, 189-191). Furthermore, Yamaoka in his 2017 interview, states:

"The establishment of the NPO Law was a complete social innovation. People who felt the

---

[30] Although Yujiro Hayashi, who was the Executive Director of the Toyota Foundation, had a strong interest in "citizens' participation," the foundation had to carefully explain the purpose to its donor, Toyota Motors Company, before setting up the Program (Toyota Foundation 2007:154).

[31] Interview with Atsuko Doumoto, Yoshinori Yamaoka, and Toshio Tsuji: http://npolaw-archive.jp/?page_id=53 (In Japanese, retrieved 23rd Jun. 2018).

limitations of the one-hundred-year old Public Benefit Corporation system started to

simultaneously raise questions from different perspectives, conduct research, design and

propose concrete policies, exchange views throughout Japan, and make numerous amendments

to the Bill in the Diet through serious discussions, leading to a unique legislative process.

Finally, it created a major hole in the Public Benefit Corporation system. It's not only about the

process of the legislation. When we take the time to tackle an issue which lies at the foundation

of society, even by going this way and that, it may create true social innovation."[32]

What Yamaoka had as his vision was replacing the uniform social services provided by the

central government to allow more initiatives by local communities. Each community was supposed to think

and create in their own way, through equal collaboration and shared responsibilities between citizens and

local government (Yamaoka 1999:127-132; Yamaoka 2001:29).[33] He also found value in the NPO's nature

as a "movement" and questions the argument which only focuses on the "business" or "management" of

NPOs (Yamaoka 1999:149-151). Matsubara echoes Yamaoka by saying in his 2017 interview that society

changed its perspective on NPOs from seeing them as "something done by left-leaning and heretical

people" to a more positive view, and it led to local governments and businesses / foundations beginning to

support NPOs, as well as bringing new people into the sector. He also emphasizes that the process brought

"citizens" into public benefit activities for the first time, not allowing the governmental sector to dominate

it.[34]

At the same time, Matsubara points out that the two trends – first the citizens' activities to have

the people's needs reflected in government policy and to become a route for civic participation, and second

---

[32] Interview with Atsuko Doumoto, Yoshinori Yamaoka, and Toshio Tsuji, same as above.

[33] Koichi Kato, who continued to be the central figure supporting the 1998 NPO Law and its amendment
processes from the LDP and corresponded with Professor L. Salamon from Johns Hopkins University before the
Great Hanshin Earthquake, notes that "my major interest was how to place NPOs and volunteer works when
thinking about society after the impasse of the "Welfare State model," parallel to the interest of Yamaoka
(Kojima 2003:74).

[34] Interview with Akira Matsubara "What we aimed for with the NPO Law": http://npolaw-
archive.jp/?page_id=492 (in Japanese, retrieved 21st Jun. 2018).

the governmental need to supplement its operations by utilizing NPOs - came into conflict.[35]

When we examine the literature on NPOs published in Japan during the 1990s, there are books showing the vision of nonprofit and voluntary sectors and organizations actively working in society, such as the translation of Peter Drucker's *Managing the Nonprofit Organization* (Drucker 1991; Hayashi and Imata 1999; Yamauchi 1997). However, in the 2000s after the enactment of the NPO Law there were more works focusing on more pragmatic NPO management and operations (Kashiwagi 2004; Sakamoto 2004; Tao 2004) or partnerships between NPOs and governments or businesses (Matsushita 2002; Ueyama 2002; Ushiro 2009; Yamaoka et al. 2001). This seems to show the role of NPOs being established in society, but also reflects a fading of the idealism which was prominent during the 1990s. Tanaka (2008) was one of the authors who warned of the risk of NPOs depending on governmental funding, but the economic stagnation after the collapse of the bubble economy in the 1990s brought about the shrinking of private nonprofit sectors between the end of the 1990s to the 2000s (Tsujinaka 2012a:13-14). Also the corporate foundations which eventually started to support NPO projects stagnated after the burst of the bubble economy in the 1990s.[36] This brought greater difficulty for NPOs in diversifying their sources of funding.

And in the 2010s after the Great East Japan Earthquake and Tsunami, the dependency of NPOs on the public sector become even stronger. Doumoto voiced her concerns that the citizens are losing their independent mindset and relying instead on the government.[37] The detachment between NPOs and the general public can be seen in a public opinion survey conducted by the Cabinet Office in 2016. As Figure 2.4 shows, while 37.6 percent say that they are either "very much interested (5.4 percent)" or "somewhat interested (32.2 percent)" in NPOs, the majority of 62.4 percent responded that they are either "not interested at all (15.4 percent)" or "not interested that much" in NPOs (Cabinet Office 2016:22).[38]

---

[35] Interview with Matsubara, same as above.

[36] Direct conversation with Mr. Hiroshi Tanaka, the Japan Foundation Center (5th Sep. 2018)

[37] Interview with Doumoto, Yamaoka, and Tsuji, same as above.

[38] In the same survey, only 26.9 percent of respondents answered that they are strongly or somewhat interested in Public Benefit Corporations, which means people still have more interest in NPOs compared to Public Benefit Corporations (Cabinet Office 2016a:24).

Figure 2.4 Level of Public Interest in Nonprofit Organizations in Japan
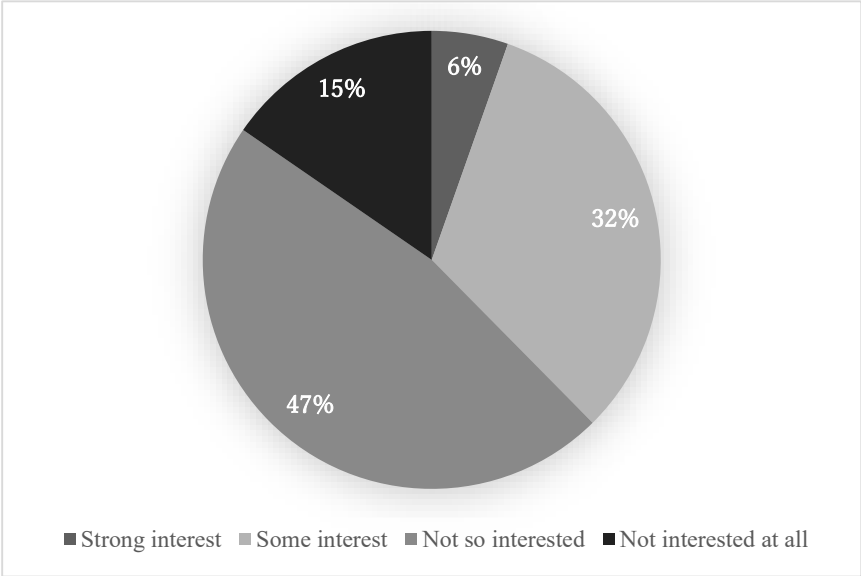
Source: Cabinet Office (2016a:22)

2.2.3 Analysis

The NPO scheme, which started as a central legislation, may seem to be a mere top-down process. It is also true that the "window of policy" opened by the 1995 Great Hanshin Earthquake had a significant impact on the process (Kojima 2003:231). However, we need to pay attention to the contributions of the civil society sector who made continuous efforts before the disaster and made the best of their opportunity after the Great Hanshin Earthquake. Yamaoka recalls the process and says, "we were saying that the legislation would be enacted in the twenty-first century until we had the 1995 Great Hanshin Earthquake. But the disaster made the legislation possible without having discussion about civil society and the civic sector. We need to review that part from now on."[39] Because of their attempts to conduct research on overseas countries and to create networks that included different regions in Japan, they were able to prepare draft bills and provide input to the MPs in a short period of time, which led to the legislation by MPs instead of the Cabinet legislation as initially proposed. Also, these endeavors created a common understanding and

---

[39] Interview with Doumoto, Yamaoka, and Tsuji, same as above.

vision (applied from overseas experience and knowledge, especially from the U.S. and the U.K.) among leaders in the civil society sector such as Matsubara or Yamaoka, and though they had differences in the details, the shared vision enabled the collaboration (Harada 2017:86).

The political environment during the legislation process – the LDP holding its claims first out of consideration to the other two coalition partners, and later out of necessity to compete with their main opponent, the newly established DPJ, and having supporting MPs in all major political parties including the LDP, SDP, Sakigake, DPJ, New Frontier Party, and the CPJ, made it possible to unanimously pass the Bill in the Lower House.[40] Some conservative groups and business sectors also supported NPOs as a part of public administration reform / downsizing of governmental sectors. In such an environment, Matsubara, who played the role of the main lobbyist from civil society on the central level, switched his tactics from "making requests to politicians" to connecting various stakeholders through common interests. For example, he persuaded ministries that were in charge of international development, elderly care, and disaster prevention as well as MPs, political organizations, and religious organizations that NPOs may be useful in some way for their various agendas and operations.[41] This process and the "alliances" between different groups at the central level created a new model for MPs and civil society members to co-create a legislative process, which became a tradition in the NPO Law amendment process. The process also changed the mindset of society and enabled the change to the long-lasting Public Benefit Organization system which had continued since the nineteenth century.[42]

Next, the "alliances" were developed at local levels, mostly between local governments and NPOs. During the 1990s through the 2000s, both the decentralization process and the pressure to streamline the governmental system created more work for local governments, as well as outsourcing of operations to

---
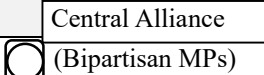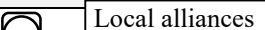
[40] Interview with Doumoto, Yamaoka, and Tsuji, same as above.

[41] Interview with Akira Matsubara http://npolaw-archive.jp/?page_id=360 (In Japanese, retrieved 24th Jun. 2018).

[42] However, when the Public Benefit Organization system was finally amended in 2008, it lacked a wide range of involvement from the civil society sector or MPs, and was developed mostly by the Cabinet Office, unlike the processes of NPO Law (Yamaoka 2007:598-601).

NPOs. As a consequence, NPOs have grown into a considerable sector in social service provision, especially in their partnerships with governmental sectors at local levels, as the processes in Table 2.5 show. But at the same time, NPOs became more dependent on governmental funding and operational income provided by the Long-term Elderly Care Insurance or other outsourcing of governmental services, such as the Designated Manager System for public facilities. On the other hand, most NPOs failed to raise funding from donations or membership fees, which indicates a weak linkage with the general public.

Table 2.5 Scaling Patterns and Paths for Non-Profit Organizations, Japan[43]

	Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutional-ization
			Central Alliance	
Gov.	(Suspicion from gov. and business)		○ (Bipartisan MPs) (NPO Law)	○ Local alliances (local govs. outsourced to NPOs)
Businesses		1995 Hanshin Earthquake moved the process	○ (Keidanren's support)	
Civil Society	○ (Ideas brought from US/UK)	○ →	○ (Civil society as a key stakeholder in legislation process)	○ (local NPOs)

○ minor / ◯ : major involvement from each sector

⬚ : new ideation

✳ : conflict with the initiative

▭ : legislation

▢ : multi-sectoral alliance

2.3 Case Analysis 2: Environmental Pollution

2.3.1 Background

In this section we examine the experience of environmental pollution, which is called *kogai* [公害], which literally means "public harm". Environmental pollution issues in Japan can be dated back to cases caused by the mining industry in the late 19th century, or even before modernization (Inoue 2006:9-11). By the

---

[43] Details shown in Appendix 1.

1950s, as post-war recovery and industrial development accelerated, there were already a number of health hazard phenomena reported in areas including Minamata, Yokkaichi, and the Jintsu river areas, but they did not attract attention nationally, but were considered instead to be local problems for "farmers and fishers" who were in a marginal position in greater Japanese society (Fujikawa 2017:20; Tsuru 1999:59-60). Laws and regulations were either absent or lacked scientific standards and penalties by which to effectively stop the pollution, and local governments were largely supportive of industries (Iijima 2000:160).[44]

2.3.2 Processes

Initially, protests from local residents stayed small and local and were not successful against powerful enterprises. Corporates, connected with governments and academics, denied that they were the ones causing the damage. For instance, in Minamata, the mechanisms behind how organic mercury was produced and how it caused damage to humans were not scientifically proven at that time, and although a group from the local Kumamoto University suggested that the "disease" was caused by organic mercury in 1959, authoritative scientists gave "scientific" evidence that what people in Minamata were suffering from was not caused by mercury (Miyogawa 2002:273-275).

The turning point was a public protest in three municipalities in Shizuoka prefecture in central Japan opposing the construction of a petrochemical complex by major companies. The movement had the cooperation of local school teachers and health professionals like pharmacists, and they conducted their own scientific investigations, study tours to other sites, and public education programs. It led to major public protests, and finally to statements of opposition being delivered by heads and representatives of three municipalities in 1964, and as a result, the businesses were forced to abandon the project. This became a role model for other areas suffering from pollution (Iijima 2000:152-154; Ui 2014:303).

---

[44] When the Ministry of Welfare tried to send the Environmental Pollution Prevention Bill to the parliaments in 1955/1957, strong opposition from business associations prevented it (Miyamoto 2014a:63-64).

Also, after the 1960s, some local governmental heads[45] such as Mayor Ichio Asukata of

Yokohama city (1963-1978), Governor Ryokichi Minobe of the Tokyo metropolitan government (1967-

1979), and Governor Ryoichi Kuroda of Osaka prefecture (1971-1979), were supportive of environmental

protection and set stricter environmental regulations and policies such as the 1969 Tokyo Metropolitan

Bylaw on Environmental Disruption Prevention, with detailed regulations and enforcement measures

against violations (Miyamoto 2014a:198-201). Moreover, they concluded local-level agreements on

pollution standards with corporates operating in their own areas. In 1964, after receiving complaints from

local residents, Yokohama city, under the strong leadership of Mayor Asukata, made the first pollution

prevention agreement with a local coal power plant, and this so-called "Yokohama model" spread to other

areas. The number of industrial operators having an agreement with a local government grew from fourteen

in 1965 to 854 in 1970, and 8,923 in 1975 (Ito 2016:22-23, 45-47; Okada 2016). These efforts provided a

prototype for the central government to design regulations, and a government commission (the so-called

Kogai Commission) gave a report in 1966 placing responsibility upon the parties causing environmental

damage (Tsuru 1999:62).

And after the late 1960s, local residents and victims filed suits with the court to recover damages

and were eventually compensated. Through these lawsuits and court decisions, the new idea of

"environmental rights" was developed and became entrenched as a social value (Miyamoto 2014a:210-

211). Environmental protection soon became a popular area for both civic volunteering and corporate CSR

activities. As a result, there were over 15,000 environmental Japanese NGOs working on environmental

protection in 2007 (OECD 2010:72).

Following these social pressures, legislation and institutional frameworks at the national level

were finally developed. The Basic Law for Environmental Pollution Control was passed by parliament in

1967, and in the 1970 parliament 14 related laws were set or revised. In 1971, the Environment Agency was

---

[45] They were often supported by opposition parties, and called as "Progressive Head" [*Kakushin Shucho* 革新首長].

established as a central government agency. After the 1970s (especially after the post-1973 oil shocks),

businesses followed the regulations and invested in pollution reduction (JICA 2004).[46] As an OECD report

acknowledges, pollution in Japan is now among the lowest in OECD countries (OECD 2010:26).

2.3.3 Analysis

The case of environmental pollution was a major success as an SI initiative which managed to largely solve

the major harms and problems caused by it.[47] It also managed to change people's mindsets and behaviors

in a fairly short period of roughly twenty years and is now deeply embedded within the values of Japanese

people (Miyamoto 2014a; Tomozawa 2014). Table 2.6 shows a summary of the process mainly in the 1960s

and 1970s.

Table 2.6 Scaling Patterns and Paths for Environmental Pollution, Japan[48]

	Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutional-ization
Gov.	✸		Local alliances (local gov. setting own regulations)	Central / local alliances (central gov.) (legislation)
Businesses	✸ (Business not accepting responsibility)	✸	◯ / ✸ (Some business start cooperating)	(following regulations)
Civil Society	◯ (weak opposition by local residents)	◯ (scaling after 1963-64 Shizuoka protests)	◯ (academics and lawyers developing the idea of environmental rights)	◯ (embedded as a social value in society)

---

[46] Still, authors like Miyamoto (2014a:575-576) claim that businesses mostly transferred their operations to other countries and continued to pollute.

[47] Still, in many areas pollution continued more or less, and continuing health hazards and conflicts had to be dealt with by local communities. One of these areas, the Mizushima area in Okayama had to go through lawsuits from 1983 until 1996, when they were settled. Mr. Terutomo Ota, who was involved in the case, recalls that a common understanding between governments, businesses, and society that environmental pollution has to be stopped was formed by the 1990s, and this understanding urged the companies to take action (Iwabuchi 2018).

[48] Details shown in Appendix 1.

○ : minor / ◯ : major involvement from each sector

⛅ : new ideation

💥 : conflict with the initiative

▭ : legislation

▢ : multi-sectoral alliance

We can see that this is a bottom-up process initiated by civil society / social movement which then expanded to local governments and finally to the central government and businesses. It first began as small, localized protests without much connection with other groups, but the 1963-64 Shizuoka movement became the watershed event for scaling, and grassroots movements formed by local residents and scientists, teachers, lawyers, and journalists in other areas created overwhelming pressure on governments and businesses to gradually change their behavior (Fujikawa 2017:22; Iijima 2000:161; JICA 2004; Ui 2014:213). Local governments also played an important role by setting additional regulations and pollution standards in their territories before national laws and regulations, and by enforcing them through compliance inspections. They also conducted negotiations with local businesses for stricter standards (Okada 2016), and led to the formation of local-level "alliances." Moreover, the lawsuits filed by local residents and supported by lawyers and academics led to court decisions in favor of local populations, such as the 1972 Yokkaichi Judgement. This pushed corporations to withdraw from appealing to higher courts and to instead accept their responsibilities (Ito 2016:20, 111-112; Miyamoto 2014b:13).

Corporations were reluctant at first to accept responsibility for the damages they had incurred or to reduce their pollution-creating activities. But when faced with strong social pressure, they began to assume responsibility for reducing environmental pollution[49]. Still, it was a time when Japanese companies were swiftly growing, so pollution/environment-related investment was a marginal cost and not a significant burden upon them. Corporates also enjoyed generous credit assurance schema to invest in

---

[49] Some corporate leaders were eager to introduce new technologies and reduce environmental pollutions, such as Mr. Kikawada of Tokyo Electric Power who decided to introduce LNG instead of coal and oil for power generation as "a social mission" of the company (Ito 2016:49-50, 177).

pollution reduction measures. As they applied or developed state-of-the-art technologies, this actually supported the emergence of a new industry to produce anti-pollution equipment, such as stack gas desulfurization facilities or the utilization of liquefied natural gas (LNG).[50] The investment also worked as a cost-effective upgrade to overcome global competition (Ito 2016:9-10; JICA 2004).

Therefore, as a whole process we can say that having such bottom-up initiatives helped to develop local-level "alliances" between various stakeholders (local governments, businesses, and civil society including intellectuals) who had different values and interests but still were able to agree on change, and brought a width and depth of partnerships in the process.

In terms of ideas and values, the role of lawyers and researchers who discovered and developed the positive values of "the environment" and "environmental rights" was crucial. Initially *kogai* was considered a local and "minor" event which only affected poor farmers or fishers, who were marginalized groups in a modern industrial society (Iijima 2000:147-149). Researchers like Dr. Shigeto Tsuru, who was an economist and worked as the chair of the Environmental Disruption Research Group, visited pollution sites including Yokkaichi, Chiba, Kurashiki, Shizuoka, and Yokohama and engaged with local residents, governments, and businesses. They also worked with the international academic community (International Social Science Council) to hold the 1970 International Symposium on Environmental Disruption in Tokyo, which made a declaration of "environmental rights" prior to the 1972 Stockholm Conference on Human Environment (Miyamoto 2014b:4-11; Tsuru 2001:334, 344). The concept of environmental rights was further developed by lawyers who supported lawsuits including the Osaka Airport Trial (Miyamoto 2014a:210-211, 342). Through these efforts, protecting the environment became a widely accepted positive value within the society (Tomozawa 2014:24).

---

[50] For instance, the production of stack gas desulfurization facilities reached JPY ninety-five billion in 1975 (Ito 2016:84).

2.4 Case Analysis 3: Community-Based Integrated Care

2.4.1 Background

This section provides another case analysis, examining community-based integrated care (CBIC), [*Chiiki Houkatsu Ke-a 地域包括ケア*] which is basically an elderly care provision system based on the collaboration of various professionals, service providers, and people in local communities. The CBIC was introduced to increase the efficiency and sustainability of the long-term care insurance (LTCI) scheme to provide long-term care[51] for older people. As mentioned above, Japan is the most aged country in the world, and in 2015 there were nearly thirty-four million people, or 26.7 percent of its population, aged over sixty-five (Cabinet Office 2016b:2). As the number of older people who need long-term care increases, it became more and more difficult for family members alone to provide such care, which requires hard work and attention around the clock. These types of "elderly-people problems" began receiving attention in the 1970s and 1980s, when the number of bedridden elderly reached 600,000 in 1984 and so-called "social hospitalization," which means old people occupying hospitals as a practical nursing home, became a social phenomenon (Campbell 2000:84; Yuuki 2011:55-57).

After local governments began directly providing elderly care services in the 1990s (Kawamura 2014:38), the LTCI[52] started in 2000 to provide in-kind care services for older people[53] by creating a public insurance scheme and quasi-market system by which the service users can select from different service providers (Sawada and Sumii 2014:11-13). In 2013, the number of older people who are qualified

---

[51] In this study we define long-term care as "care for people needing daily living support over a prolonged period of time," which may differ by contexts in terms of what to include, but typically includes help with activities of daily living (Colombo et al. 2011:38-39). In Japan, long-term care was separated from other medical care and consolidated as another "sector" in social services.

[52] The LTCI system itself can be considered as a remarkable example of SI, providing care services for elderly citizens and shifting the burden of care from family (especially women) to society as a whole. However, this study does not discuss the LTCI system, partly because it depends heavily on funding both from the government and insurance premiums, and because it also has a risk of creating "silos" separated by beneficiaries and service providers. For a detailed analysis of LTCI as an SI and its limitations, see Aoo (2017).

[53] Japan lacks a cash allowance as a part of long-term care system, which is different from other developed countries such as Australia, England, Germany, and Italy (Campbell et al. 2016:49-50)

as eligible to receive services are 5.7 million, and approximately 4.9 million of them used the services[54] (Cabinet Office 2016b:24-25). However, the scheme soon faced the issues of a limited number of facilities and caregivers, especially for institutional care, and increasing financial resources spent on the scheme without having a taxation basis to cover the cost[55] (Estevez-Abe 2008:291; Takahashi 2012:9).

2.4.2 Processes

In 2003, the Elderly Care Study Group, an unofficial group held under the auspices of the Ministry of Health, Labour and Welfare (MoHLW), proposed the concept of CBIC, drawing ideas from the existing local practices of cross-sectoral care, including precedents in Onomichi City[56] and Wako City. According to the report published by the Study Group, they aimed to ensure the sustainability of the LTCI system by switching focus from institutional care to "aging in place" supported by the CBIC. As in the model shown in Figure 2.5, the CBIC system was planned to be established in each local community, and to provide twenty-four-hour services through collaboration between different sectors and service providers such as housing, medical professionals, long-term care, rehabilitation, and local volunteers, among others (Elderly Care Study Group 2003).

---

[54] The population over sixty-five years old in 2015 is approximately 33.9 million, so the majority of older people are not qualified as LTCI service users (Cabinet Office 2016b:2).

[55] In 2012, the total amount spent for LTCI services reached JPY 7.7 trillion (USD seventy billion) (Hirose 2014:164)

[56] Mitsugi Town (which became a part of Onomichi City in 2005) in Hiroshima Prefecture suffered from an increasing number of bedridden older people and started operating a regional health management center in 1985. The town also operated medical and home based long-term care services under Public Mitsugi Hospital (Sato 2003:76-93).

Figure 2.5 Model of the Community-based Integrated Care System
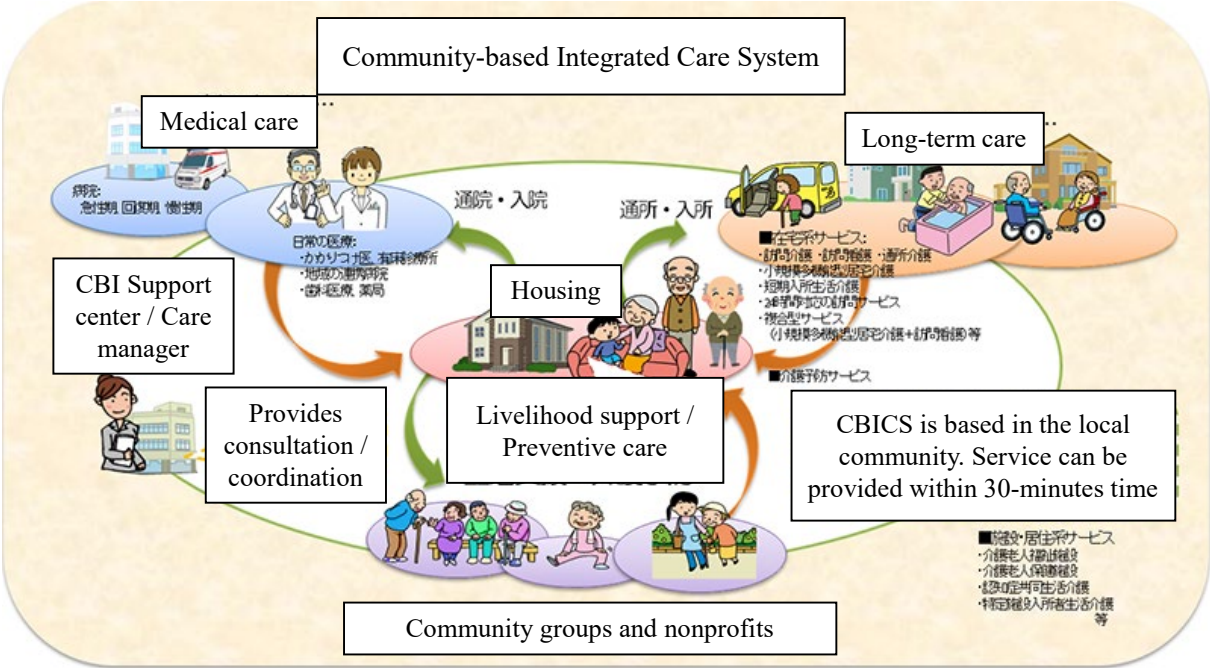
Source: Ministry of Health, Labour and Welfare website (translated by the author)

Soon after the 2003 report, relevant laws (2005 Revised Elderly Care Insurance Act and 2006 Medical Care System Reform Act) were revised and CBIC was incorporated as a part of the LTCI system. Each local municipality was tasked with developing and managing their own CBIC system. And as of 2012, more than 7,000 Community-based Integrated Support Centers (including branches and sub-centers, financed by an LTCI scheme) are in operation,[57] responsible for coordinating with various stakeholders and resources such as medical and care professionals, social welfare offices, nonprofits, and volunteers in the community (Sawada 2014:198). There are also reported cases of "good practices" on local levels, typically mobilizing and collaborating different stakeholders for information-sharing and service provision.

For instance, there are cases of a local Social Welfare Council leading the facilitation of local

---

[57] Around thirty percent of centers are directly run by municipal governments and the rest are subcontracted to social welfare committees and other nonprofit organizations. MoHLW website "Operation of Community-based Integrated Support Center [*Chiiki houkatsu Shien Sentaa no Gyoumu* 地域包括支援センターの業務]": http://www.mhlw.go.jp/seisakunitsuite/bunya/hukushi_kaigo/kaigo_koureisha/chiiki-houkatsu/dl/link2.pdf (In Japanese, retrieved 17th Dec. 2017).

residents in Takayama City and Tsuruta City (Ooi 2010) and a Medical Cooperative operating different types of care facilities in Nagoya (Hashimoto 2010). Another case which is often mentioned as a model for CBIC is Wako City, where an active government official (Mr. Tonai) worked to conduct a needs survey and organize service providers and experts within care plan meetings (Numao 2014:137-138).

Recently there was a case in which Fukuoka City subcontracted Hitachi Ltd. to develop a CBIC Information Platform to compile different medical and long-term care data and share it among beneficiaries and their families, medical and care professionals, as well as utilizing it for policy development (Fukuoka City 2017).[58] This seems to be a promising approach both to utilize the enormous amount of available data and to ease the difficulty for various stakeholders to share information and coordinate.[59]

Still, in most local municipalities and communities, the creation and management of the CBIC system is mostly done through face-to-face consultation between stakeholders, and there is a strong reluctance to actively take on such a responsibility, mainly due to the shortage of active coordinators who can organize collaboration between different sectors and institutions (Asakawa 2017; Miyamoto 2014c:36; Yuuki 2011). Local governments are suffering from a decreasing number of staff and lack of expertise, caused partly by continuing administrative reforms, and are not able to cover these complex tasks (Numao 2014:131-135). Community-based Integrated Support Centers, which frequently have to cover from five to ten thousand service users per Center (some over thirty thousand) frequently with fewer than ten staff per center, are not able to play this role either (Hirose 2014:227-228; Mitsubishi UFJ Research and Consulting

---

[58] Fukuoka City Non-insured Services Information website [*Fukuoka Shi Hoken Gai Saabisu Jyouhou Teikyou Saito 福岡市保険外サービス情報提供サイト*] https://careinfo.city.fukuoka.lg.jp/public/top (In Japanese, retrieved 20th Apr. 2018).

[59] Hitachi and Fukuoka City Collaborating to Build Community-Based Integrated Care Information Platform by Analyzing Big Data [*Hitachi to Fukuoka Shi no Kyousou ni yori Biggu Deeta Bunseki de Chiiki Houkatsu Kea Jyouhou Puratto Fuoomu wo Kouchiku 日立と福岡市の協創により、ビッグデータ分析で地域包括ケア情報プラットフォームを構築*] Hitachi Ltd. website: http://www.foresight.ext.hitachi.co.jp/_ct/17116246?__CAMCID=lknjlhToJY-387&__CAMSID=COXTecBgsidA-55&__CAMVID=NOXTECBgsiDA&_c_d=1 (In Japanese, retrieved 20th Apr. 2018).

2010:24; Shirasawa 2011:241-242).[60] According to a 2013 survey conducted with 4,484 Centers, they responded that the creation of regional collaboration networks is the biggest challenge they face due to the limited capacity of staff, and nearly half of them (49.5 percent) did not conduct a community care meeting to build networks during the year (Hirose 2014:232-233). Also, in most areas, CBIC lacks the expected understanding, support and participation of stakeholders including politicians, medical experts, care service providers, and local volunteers (Maezawa 2011:72; Miyamoto 2014c; Takahashi 2012)[61].

The MoHLW recently has further expanded the concept of CBIC from elderly care to cross-sectoral care, by the new name of "Community Symbiotic Society" [*Chiiki Kyosei Shakai* 地域共生社会]. This concept is planned to mobilize local resources to meet the needs of not only older people but also other groups with needs, such as children and people with physical or mental disabilities, among others (MoHLW 2017). This is expected to solve the limitations of CBIC as operated within the framework of the LTCI scheme, which was by definition limited to supporting older people, but the results are still unclear.

2.4.3 Analysis

Considering these processes and issues, it is hard to say that CBIC is fully functioning as planned and helping to coordinate local practitioners as well as mobilizing local resources. Also, it has not yet been embedded within social value and norms within the society. Thus, at least for the present, it has to be described as "failed," or having only "partial" success as an SI initiative. Table 2.7 summarizes the above processes.

---

[60] The Center has multiple responsibilities and tasks other than coordination, including applying for LTCI eligibility, developing care plans for preventive care services, providing information and consultation, educating and training older people and their caregivers, and protecting the rights of the elderly (Sawada 2014:198-199).
[61] For example, Maezawa (2011:72) points out that most medical doctors only focus on the treatment of patients who visit hospitals, and are unaware of their roles in local communities, and patients are also used to being the "beneficiary" of medical care, and are not active in participating in the CBIC system. Asakura (2010), while showing some of good examples in which local stakeholders are building community-based care systems, still argues that more needs to be done to create such systems.

Table 2.7 Scaling Patterns and Paths for Community-based Integrated Care, Japan[62]

	Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutional-ization
Gov.		○ (local gov.)	○ (MoHWL) (Legislation)	○ (local govs.) (Lack of local alliances)
Businesses				(The value of CBIC not embedded)
Civil Society	○	○		

○ minor / ◯ : major involvement from each sector

⬭ : new ideation

✺ : conflict with the initiative

▭ : legislation

▢ : multi-sectoral alliance

It is notable that CBIC was a heavily top-down process, initiated by a central government ministry (MoHLW). The change of the policy formation process in the 2000s and the concentration of power in the central ministries made this possible (Uchiyama 2010:8). Although the idea and model were taken from the best practices of local practitioners and local governments including Onomichi and Wako, it was not a well-developed or wide-spread social initiative before it became a central government policy.

The somewhat idealistic concept of CBIC lacks the broad support of the local governments who were entrusted to form and manage the system, or the existing businesses and service providers who benefitted from LTCI funding (including subcontracting for Community-based Integrated Support Centers) but did not find interest in "collaborating" with other stakeholders as expected in the CBIC. The systematic methods or technologies were underdeveloped. Also, most people who were quickly growing accustomed to the LTCI system and being "beneficiaries" of that system could not be motivated to participate and contribute to the system as volunteers or supporters of their neighbors. They felt CBIC was an excuse to reduce the service level of the LTCI systems (Numao 2014:122). In conclusion, it remained a government-

---

[62] Details shown in Appendix 1.

led concept and policy, and could not find a wide range of support to develop and scale the initiative.

2.5 Summary

By comparing the three cases of NPOs, environmental pollution, and community-based integrated care, we can observe two factors that affect the successful scaling processes.

First, "alliances" of different sectors and stakeholders seem to be the crucial mechanism for both scaling and the initiative becoming embedded in the society. The environmental pollution process started as protests by local populations, but later different models of success were created at the local levels (such as Shizuoka or Yokohama) before coming to the central level, each with a strong "alliance" between a wide range of stakeholders, including local governments, businesses, and civil society. The proliferating "bottom-up" processes help to create such alliances in different places, thus contributing to the scaling of the SI initiative. NPOs, meanwhile, started as central legislation (and an "alliance" at that level) but later developed local partnerships mainly between local governments. On the contrary, in the case of CBIC, although there were different cases of best practice, it was not a wide-spread movement and the initiative came largely as a top-down concept and policy from a central ministry. It also lacked partners who found interest in and responded to the given opportunity. Such a "hollow" top-down policy is not working as expected or rooted in society.

Second, it seems to be that a strong social concern and/or a creation of new values and ideas which have positive meaning in the society propels the advancement of a process. In the case of environmental pollution, the social movement stayed relatively small and local until the 1970s, when urban residents began to feel that it was their own problem. Businesses reacted positively to the change, mostly because they felt pressure from society and the court decisions holding them responsible for the pollution. The new concepts and values created by academics and lawyers such as environmental rights or environmental protection changed people's mindsets and became a driver for continuing the activities in different sectors. Also the legal entity for NPOs was created utilizing the "policy window" opened by the

Great Hanshin Earthquake, and later, with all their shortcomings, became a positive and a matter of course in society and hold a stable position mainly as a social service provider. In the case of CBIC, it is still not embedded as a strong social value which can motivate people to participate or contribute by taking action. Ideas can be imported from other countries, as in the case of nonprofit sectors in the U.S. and the U.K., or created / invented out of local knowledge and experience, as in the case of Dr. Tsuru and the other lawyers and journalists who developed the concept of environmental rights from interviewing local people.

Chapter 3: China

3.1 Country Context

Soon after the end of WWII, in 1949 China became the socialist People's Republic of China (PRC), which led to some drastic transformation of its of political, economic and social systems based on the Socialist ideology, including the Great Leap Forward and the Great Cultural Revolution. After the 1980s, the country changed its policy to Reform and Opening, but the Communist Party of China still has a strong grip on the state and political systems. As market reform expands, socialist welfare systems ceased to be effective and had to be replaced by other means to support people with various needs.

3.1.1 Political System

Since the Qin dynasty which started in the 9th Century B.C., traditional Chinese dynasties essentially maintained a system of one Emperor and an empire divided into districts governed by bureaucrats, who were mostly civilians who passed a selection process based on their knowledge of Confucian classics and literature (Kishimoto 1998:18).[1] In 1911, the Qing dynasty, ruled by Manchurian emperors, were overthrown by the Xinhai Revolution and the Republic of China (RoC) led by President Sun Yat-sen was established. However, the RoC suffered from uprisings by warlords and later from a Japanese invasion. After the defeat of Japan in 1945, the RoC / Kuomintang and the Communist Party of China (CPC) fought a civil war, until the former fled to Taiwan at the end of 1949. On 1st October 1949, Mao Zedong announced the establishment of the People's Republic of China (PRC) (Amako 2013:2-13).

A noticeable characteristic of the PRC's political system is the so-called "Party-state system", an influence of the CPC over other political and administrative institutions and other groups (Charlton

---

[1] It is a unique quality of the Chinese system that this scholar-gentry [*Shidafu* 士大夫 / *xiangshen* 乡绅] class was mostly formed through academic capability rather than noble lineage (Miyazaki 1963).

2010:224-226). The CPC has multiple means of exerting its authority including guidance of governmental bodies, party committees set up in various institutions, media control, and authority over personnel appointment (Tsujinaka et al. 2014:19-20), which in some literature called as "national corporatism" or "socialist corporatism" (Hishida 2010:7; Tang 2012:148-152). The CPC controls the legislation (National People's Congress), administration (State Council), justice (Supreme People's Court), military (People's Liberation Army), eight non-communist political parties, and eight people's organizations (including China Women's Federation, Communist Youth League, and All-China Federation of Trade Unions) (Amako 2015:22-30; Yu 2014:118).

Until the end of the 1970s, the PRC was involved in a number of international conflicts and domestic political turmoil including the Korean War, the Vietnam War, the Sino-Vietnam War, a confrontation and armed conflict with the Soviet Union, and the Great Leap Forward [*Da Yuejin* 大跃进] and the Great Cultural Revolution [*Wenhua Dageming* 文化大革命] (Amako 2013:12-90). It was only after the death of Chairman Mao and the end of the Great Cultural Revolution in 1976 that Deng Xiaoping and his group finally managed to turn the county's course to "Reform and Opening" [*Gaige Kaifang* 改革开放] and modernization in 1978. Along with economic reform, political reform, in particular a change in the relationship between the CPC and governmental bodies, was briefly brought onto the agenda in the 1980s, but it was crushed after the Tiananmen Incident in 1989 (Takahara and Maeda 2014:23-40, 80-85), and the Party-government system continues until today.

Another tradition of the PRC since Mao's time is the relatively strong autonomy of the local governments. According to Tsujinaka and Kojima (2014:22), the PRC has five administrative levels from central, provincial level, prefectural level, county level, and subdistrict level (Table 3.1).

Table 3.1 Levels and Numbers of Administrative Units in China

Level / Name of Major Units (with numbers for each of the major unit):[2]
i.   Central [*Guo* 国]
ii.   Province [*Sheng* 省] (23) / Autonomous Region [*Zizhiqu* 自治区] (5) / Municipality [*Zhixiashi* 直辖市] (4)[3] / Special Administrative Region [*Tebie Xingzhengqu* 特别行政区] (2: Hong Kong and Macau)
iii.   Prefecture [*Diqu* 地区] / City [*Shi* 市] (332)[4]
iv.   County [*Xian* 县] (1,456) / City [*Shi* 市] (369) / District [*Qu* 区] (857)
v.   Subdistrict [*Jiedao* 街道] (7,194) / Town [*Zhen* 镇] (19,683) / Township [*Xiang* 乡] (13,587)

Especially since the Reform and Opening era, local governments have been given a higher level of autonomy in funding, personnel appointment, and administration (Tsujinaka and Kojima 2014:22-23). A number of new economic systems and other reforms were first tested in local special economic zones and cities, such as Guangdong, Fujian, Hainan, and Shanghai, before they were introduced at the national level (Takahara and Maeda 2014:64).[5]

3.1.2 Socio-Economic Conditions

Not long after the establishment of the PRC, in the early 1950s the CPC led by Chairman Mao started to "socialize" China's economic and social structures. Under state planning, enterprises became state-owned or collectivized, and rural villages were transformed into cooperatives and People's Communes [*Renmin*

---

[2] There are other categories especially for ethnic minority areas, but they are omitted in this list for simplicity.

[3] Four Municipalities directly under the central government are large cities (Beijing, Tianjin, Shanghai, and Chongqing) which are divided into Districts and Counties.

[4] Cities exist at two different levels (Prefecture-level Cities and County-level Cities).

[5] However, Isobe (2008:45-47), based on detailed observation of the Guangdong province during the Reform and Opening era, argues that the independence of local leaderships should not be overestimated, and that basically they have been operating under a mandate from the central leadership.

Gongshe 人民公社], units based on collective ownership and production (Tang 2017:30-41). The Great Leap Forward in the 1950s, which was an attempt to rapidly bring the Chinese economy into the heavy industrial stage, resulted in a failure and great famine causing the deaths of over twenty million people. The Great Cultural Revolution, driven by "Maoism," denounced anything considered "capitalistic" or part of "Western imperialism," and left the country's economy and industry greatly deteriorated in its aftermath (Marukawa 2013:33-37,48-49).

After the end of the 1970s, under Reform and Opening, collective farms were dissolved to incentivize individual farmers' production. New enterprises both in urban and rural areas flourished and resulted in creating new wealth. Privatization and restructuring of state-owned enterprises has been another issue but due to the bureaucracy's desire to control strategic industries and the vested interests of industrial groups, it is done only gradually and partially (Rana and Hamid 1996:198). It is also noticeable that the PRC has not renounced their socialist principles and planned economy, as apparent in the existence of the economic plans (Five Year Plans) and the central planning bureau (National Development and Reform Commission [*Guojia Fazhan he Gaige Weiyuanhui* 国家发展和改革委员会]) (Marukawa 2013:63-39; Tang 2017:27).

With a "socialist market economy" system, the economic growth rate after the Reform and Opening is remarkable, reaching around ten percent per annum from 1980 to 2010. This became the driver which made China the second largest economy in the world, and reduced severe poverty (people living on less than USD1.25 a day) from sixty-one percent of the population in 1990 to four percent in 2015 (United Nations 2015:14).[6]

The public welfare system in traditional China was limited, and measures were limited to communal grain storage to prepare for famines [*Yicang* 义仓 / *Shecang* 社仓] and provisional support

---

[6] Still, we need to note that there are huge regional differences and gaps in income and socio-economic conditions between different areas in China, especially between the so-called "East" (coastal regions with big cities, showing rapid economic development) and the "West" (inland regions, especially rural areas) (Guo and Min 2011:57).

for needy groups, which were often led by the local scholar-gentry in local communities (Li 2018a:288-296; Tao 2009:31). Under the Confucian tradition, direct and extended family was the main source of support and welfare, including the support of older parents by their children (Dixon 1981:7-9; Eastman 1994:28-31).

The change of welfare systems after the PRC is described further in the case study, but another issue worth mentioning is the birth control program known as the "one child policy." This began in 1979 and allowed only one child per couple (with exceptions for ethnic minorities and other groups). Although the policy has been relaxed recently, it dramatically accelerated the aging process and now China has more than 140 million people over the age of sixty-five, constituting 14.3 percent of the population (Zhu 2017:89). The "4-2-1" family structure caused by the policy, which means four grandparents, two parents, and only one grandchild, has made it difficult for younger families to provide care for the elderly (Nie 2016:351-352, 354; Xu and Zhang 2010:119).

Another unique social system in the PRC is the division between urban and rural populations. The average income of the urban population amounts to roughly double or triple that of the rural population. People who are registered in rural areas are not allowed to move to urban areas, and even if they do, as many of them do to seek jobs (which are called *Mingong* [民工]), they do not have access to urban welfare systems and become a *de facto* "migrant" in their own country, which increases the risk of a lack of social welfare and stability (Ako 2012:55; Guo 2017:34).

3.1.3 Civil Society and Social Movements

From ancient times, Chinese society had a variety of guilds, associations and fraternities, for mutual help and in some occasions to survive under or revolt against autocratic rulers (Li 2018a:289-290, 296-297; Simon 2013: Chapters 3-4).[7] However, most of them were for serving extended family members, people

---

[7] Thus, such sects and associations were under oppression from the dynasties as a threat to the emperor's rule (Liu 2008:22)

from certain townships or regions, or for members only and not for general public benefit (Eastman 1994: 292-302; Kishimoto 2012:115-116, 122). In the early 20th Century, during the end of the Qing dynasty and the Republic of China era, charitable associations and organizations emerged, mostly led by local elites (the scholar-gentry) working in poverty alleviation, education and training, and infrastructure development (Chen 2009; Fuma 2009). However, almost all of them were nationalized or disappeared soon after the PRC came into power (Okamura 2017:251; Yu 2014:116-117).

Under the PRC regime, only eight People's Organizations [*Renmin Tuanti 人民团体*][8] were officially allowed. These organizations were given the dual roles of communicating governmental decisions and policies to the society, and informing the government about the people's interests and demands, and they were given seats at the central Chinese People's Political Consultative Conference [*Zhongguo Renmin Zhengzhi Xieshang Huiyi 中国人民政治协商会议*] and lower level government structures. Meanwhile, other independent organizations were not allowed to officially register or operate (Huang 2014a:89).[9]

Other types of nonprofit organizations, collectively called "social organizations" [*Shehui Tuanti 社会团体 / Shehui Zuzhi 社会组织*][10] prospered after the Reform and Opening era, as we see detailed in the case study below. The 2008 Sichuan Earthquake made private donations and volunteering popular with the public. According to Li (2018b:54), there were 662,000 officially registered social organizations (329,000 Associations [*Xiehui 协会*], 4,784 Foundations [*Jijinhui 基金会*], and 329,000 People-Run Non-Enterprise Units [*Minban Fei Qiye Danwei 民办非企业单位*] (PRNEUs)) by the end of 2015.[11]

---

[8] The eight People's Organizations are: Communist Youth League of China, All-China Federation of Trade Unions, All-China Women's Federation, All-China Youth Federation, All-China Federation of Industry and Commerce, China Association for Science and Technology, All-China Federation of Returned Overseas Chinese, and All China Federation of Taiwan Compatriots. In 2000, the Ministry of Civil Affairs defined 25 organizations which do not require registration, including Chinese People's Association for Friendship with Foreign Countries, All-China Journalists Association, China Disabled Person's Federation, Chinese Red Cross and Soong Ching Ling Foundation, among others (Huang 2014a:102).

[9] Other organizations include "Institutional Organizations," which were set up and funded by governmental bodies to provide services such as culture, education, health, and sports (Huang 2014b:202).

[10] The definition of social organizations differs depending on which legal entities (and non-registered organizations / groups) the author includes. The definition in this study is given below in the case study.

[11] The number of people's organizations and other semi-governmental social organizations operating in different

3.2 Case Analysis: Welfare Reform and the Development of Social Organizations

3.2.1 Background

In socialist China after the collectivization movement in the 1950s, work integration became the main source of social security and welfare. Welfare benefits were provided through workplace units [*Danwei* 单位] such as state-owned enterprises and People's Communes (Dixon 1981:15; Zhu 2014:301-302). The level of welfare differed greatly depending on the units. If a person belonged to a state-owned enterprise in an urban area, he or she could enjoy generous benefits (sometimes called an "iron rice-bowl," meaning unbreakable benefits) including housing, retirement pensions, injury, disability, sickness, and maternity allowances, the use of facilities like canteens, nurseries, health clinics, sanatoriums, and other daily supplies and allowances provided by the workplace. These welfare systems were funded by different sources based on related laws and the unit's profits, and administered by unit members, with representatives from work unit managers, trade unions, and workers. Therefore, it could sometimes be difficult to control, and become quite costly for the unit[12] (Dixon 1981:40-43, 51-56; Guo 2017:35-36). Meanwhile, social welfare systems in the rural population were limited to only simple medical services. Other welfare – to provide the basic "five," which meant a minimum amount of food, clothing, housing, medical services, and a funeral (or education for children) were provided by the community only for people with "three nos," meaning no family, no working ability, and no income, such as the elderly, people who were widowed or orphaned, or disabled people without any other assistance (Leung and Xu 2010:51).

  After the 1980s in Reform and Opening era, the restructuring of socio-economic systems

---

administrative levels are far larger (6.9 million), but we shall not include them in the analysis (Tsujinaka et al. 2014:40).

[12] As a result of generous benefits, the cost of welfare sometimes topped 50 per cent of the work place's wage bill. Later by the mid-1960s they were accused by the Maoist ideologues of being "welfarism" and "revisionist sins" that corrupted revolutionary virtues, but they were later reconstructed in the 1970s until they were finally dissolved in the Reform and Opening era after the 1980s to improve the competitiveness of state-owned enterprises (Dixon 1981:55;118;126).

continued, and millions of workers were laid off from the state-run enterprise, and the socialist welfare system itself was accused of hindering economic efficiency and was gradually rescinded (Shen 2014: Zhu 2014:303-304). But without having formal social safety nets, social issues and needs become more diverse and serious, including unemployment, an aging population, environmental issues, social protests and conflicts, and migrants from rural areas to big cities who were denied access to social services. According to Zhu, the Gini coefficient in China announced by the state statistics department in 2015 was 0.462, well over the 0.4 warning level of increased risk of social unrest (Zhu 2017:90). At first, local governments and the newly introduced "community" [*Shequ 社区*] were expected to provide this badly needed social assistance for vulnerable groups,[13] instead of the weakening work units. But soon it became obvious that most local governments and "operative units" (organizations to provide direct services such as medical and social care) under governmental bodies lacked the professional capacities and financial resources to meet all of the increasing and varying needs of society (Ma 2014:80; Xu and Zhang 2010:117; Yang et al. 2016:2299).[14]

As a result, the CPC and central government eventually had to directly engage with the increasing pressure from society.[15] The Party-government system took two different approaches to tackle this major challenge, especially after the mid-2000s when they proposed the "Harmonious Society" [*Hexie Shehui 和谐社会*] to adjust the increasing inequality and secure stable livelihoods for all as a major policy target (Tang 2012:121-122): first was to develop and provide more financial resources for social safety net schemes such as pension, medical insurance, unemployment insurance, minimum livelihood protection, and

---

[13] Since the 1990s the government has been organizing Residential Committees [*Jumin Weiyuanhui 居民 委员会*] and Community Organizations [*Shequ Zuzhi 社区组织*] to meet the need on grass-roots levels (Huang 2014a:90-91).

[14] According to a 2006 AsiaBarometer survey, only 14.1 percent of respondents respond that they trust local governments "very much," which is significantly lower than 41.2 percent for the central government (Guo and Min 2011:52).

[15] For example, the 2006 AsiaBarometer survey shows that 48.1 percent of respondents say that the social welfare system is unsatisfactory, which is the highest rate of discontent among other factors (personal life, governmental services, etc.) (Guo and Min 2011:46-47).

community service, as summarized in Table 3.2, and other poverty alleviation programs to support needy

persons (Leung and Xu 2010:54; Okamura 2017:250; Zhu 2014). After the 2000s, these schemes began

shifting from residual / selective benefits to universal coverage (Shen 2016:13-14). Second was to nurture a

variety of non-state organizations which can support the vulnerable groups in society.[16]

Table 3.2 Summary of Social Security and Welfare Systems in Urban and Rural Areas in China[17]

		Urban population	**Rural population**
Collective economy era	(Welfare provided mainly by work units)	Housing, medical services, pension, allowances, education, and recreation provided by unit	Co-working and co-production, simple medical services, and other minimum things provided only for "three nos"
Reform and Opening era	Pension	1991 for employees 2011 for all residents	2009 for all residents
	Medical insurance	1998 for employees 2007 for all residents	2003 for all residents
	Unemployment insurance	1999 for employees	None
	Minimum livelihood protection	1999 for all residents	2007 for all residents
	Community service	1987 community service	None in most areas

Source: Revised from Guo (2017:39)

Here we should clarify what the term "social organization" or others mean in this chapter.

Authors use different terms both in English and in Chinese to describe the ecosystem of social and

nonprofit organizations in China, which may or may not correspond with the governmental terminology

---

[16] It is often called "socialization of welfare", but its meaning is to utilize the community and facilities for welfare and care, and is different from the old socialist model (Guo 2017:169-171).

[17] Please note that the level of benefit differs depending on the schemes, regions, and other factors. For instance, Guo (2017) reported during her field research conducted in 2014 that an urban pensioner could receive RMB 2,000 to 4,000 per month, while a rural pensioner could only receive RMB sixty.

used to distinguish different types of organizations. Some of the popular terms are social organizations, civil organizations, NGOs, and civil society. In this case study, we use the term "social organizations" (SOs) [*Shehui Tuanti* 社会团体][18] to generally describe different organizations which i) principally pursue social purposes, ii) are non-governmental in a broad sense, and iii) are not primarily for-profit. It includes associations, foundations, People-Run Non-Enterprise Units (PRNEUs), and even other organizations which are legally registered as commercial enterprises, or which do not have any legal status at all.[19]

3.2.2 Processes

The paths for social organizations in China were not straightforward ones, and they had to go through many ups and downs. SOs have flourished since the 1980s, when the Reform and Opening policy was promoted after the confusion of the Great Cultural Revolution. To allow the government to focus on modernization and economic growth, SOs were expected to provide the necessary resources for welfare and social services. Associations and organizations such as the Chinese Red Cross, YMCA, YWCA, academic associations, laborer associations, and professional associations among others were either revived or newly established. Foundations were established to collect funds from the public and international donors, starting from the China Children and Teenagers' Fund in 1981, followed by others including China Soong Ching Ling Foundation in 1982 and China Foundation of Disabled Persons in 1984. As a result, the number of registered associations and foundations at the Ministry of Civil Affairs exploded from around 5,000 in 1988 to over 150,000 in 1992. Still it was obvious that many of these were either semi-governmental or operating as a governmental arm (which were often called "GONGO", or government-organized NGO) or receiving

---

[18] Please note that the Chinese government uses this word to describe either i) associations only, or ii) a wider category including associations, foundations, People-Run Non Enterprise Units, and People's Organizations. In the definition for this case study, it is closer to the latter (ii) but excludes People's Organizations and other semi-state organizations, and includes other organizations registered as commercial enterprises, or without registration but fitting the definition.

[19] When social organizations in China do not have a connection with Party-government system, they may choose to be operate with a commercial enterprise [*Gongshang* 工商] registration, or without any registration (Zhao 2001:35).

strong support from the government, either to utilize their operational and fundraising capacities, or to shift governmental personnel as a result of public sector downsizing (Wang 2011:14-17; Yu 2017:87-89; Zhao 2010:211).

After the 1990s, the government strengthened their control of SOs, especially for those operating in for-profit activities. After several waves of so-called "clean up and reorganization" of social organizations by the government in the 1990s, the number of registered SOs decreased until they hit a low point in 1998. Also, the government released formal regulations for different organizations (1988 Measures on Foundation Administration and 1989 Regulations on Social Group Registration and Administration). SOs now had to register both under the Ministry of Civil Affairs and under a governmental department supervising SO activities. This so-called "dual registration system" became a major obstacle for any SO to get registered, especially for those who did not have a connection with the Party-government system (Xu and Li 2008:14; Wang 2011:21-25).

Although imposing such a strong restriction on SOs, the Party-government system was fully aware of the increasing need to support the marginalized groups caused by the deepening reform and transformation of China's socio-economic structure. In 1998, new Provisional Regulations on People-Run Non-Enterprise Unit (PRNEU) Registration and Administration was released, and PRNEUs were introduced as a legal entity. These private-run institutions provided various services in the fields of education, health, and social services and the number of registered PRNEUs quickly grew to over 225,000 by 2012 (Huang 2014b:200).

The Beijing Women's NGO Conference held in 1995 also provided momentum for the emergence of so-called "grassroots NGOs." They operated in new areas such as environmental degradation, HIV/AIDS, gender, and other areas of social protection and community services. Many of them operated as an enterprise or without registration and received funding from foreign donors such as the Ford Foundation, World Vision, and Oxfam Hong Kong (Xu and Li 2008:3-8; Wang 2011:26-30). Some successful projects run by SOs represented by "Project Hope", a project to build schools in remote areas since 1989, also

showed society the capacity of SOs (Liu 2008:29).

In 2004, State Council Regulations on Foundation Administration created a new type of foundation called a Non-public Funding Foundation [*Fei Gongmu Jijin Hui* 非公募基金会], which can receive funding only from specific individuals or organizations, different from Public-funding Foundation [*Gongmu Jijin Hui* 公募基金会] which can collect money from the general public. After this change, wealthy individuals and corporates established their own foundations (mostly Non-public Funding Foundations) and the number of foundations grew rapidly. According to the China Foundation Center website, the number of registered foundations is 5,775, holding total net assets of USD 15.6 billion, and with annual total of grant given from foundations of USD six billion by the end of year 2016.[20] Kojima and Kobashi (2014:22) report that the most popular areas of operation for these foundations are education and social services. Although the majority of foundations in China are "operating" foundations, which conduct programs by themselves rather than giving grants, there are some that appreciate the roles of SOs in identifying and tackling social issues, and are willing to support them. Some foundation such as Narada Foundation,[21] Dunhe Foundation,[22] and Youcheng Foundation[23] supported the SOs through grant-making, capacity building programs, and organizing networks and forums for SOs.

Also, in some areas like Shenzhen, Beijing, Nanjing, and Shanghai, governments have also initiated the development of "community foundations"[24] to collect funding locally and to provide services to local residents (Guo and Lai 2017).

The Charity Law [*Cishan Fa* 慈善法] which is the umbrella law for SOs, finally passed by the

---

[20] China Foundation Center website: http://en.foundationcenter.org.cn/mission.html (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).
[21] Narada Foundation website: http://www.naradafoundation.org/category/112 (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).
[22] Dunhe Foundation website: http://www.dunhefoundation.org/index_en.php (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).
[23] Youcheng Foundation website: http://old.youcheng.org/plus/list.php?tid=12/ (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).
[24] Please note that many of these "community foundations" are government-affiliated and their characteristics may be quite different from those of typical community foundations in the United States and other developed countries. Still, there are some strong community foundations developed by local intellectuals and businesses such as Guangdong Harmony Foundation in Guangzhou: http://www.gdharmonyfoundation.org/eindex.html (Retrieved 24th Mar. 2018).

NPC in March 2016 and took effect in September 2016 after a lengthy research and consultation processes, including visits to other countries including the U.S., the U.K., Canada, Singapore, Korea, and Japan (Li 2018b:161). It provides an overall definition of and regulations for charitable activities and organizations and their procedures, obligations, and relationships with the government. By defining the types of "charitable activities" in Article Three, it clarifies what kind of areas are prioritized by the government: support for the poor and the weak, disaster relief, education, science, culture, health and sanitation, sports, and environmental degradation and protection. These charitable activities became the *raison d'être* for Chinese SOs to win governmental approval and legitimacy – not as a right as in Western society, but as a player doing useful works in the society as approved by the Party-state system.[25] The dual registration system was abolished for the organizations meeting those requirements (Article Ten).[26] But SOs are newly requested to disclose detailed information about the organization as well as all donations and programs (Article Seventy-one to Seventy-five), in addition to submitting annual reports (Article Thirteen). Each local government at the district level and above is also tasked by the Charity Law with developing their own information platform and disclosing data and statistics related to charitable activities (Article Sixty-nine to Seventy) (Okamura 2017:256-257; Suzuki 2014:546-547).

A major shift observed in the Charity Law is the Party-government system relying more heavily on information disclosure to ensure sound governance and financial management of SOs instead of detailed and direct supervision from the government departments. Although the Charity Law still lacks some major provisions such as tax exemption for SOs, it provides a comprehensive framework for these organizations and opens up a new stage for their further development with a new and supportive approach.

For SOs to develop and function to meet the immense demand for support and services, what need to be established beyond the legal and regulative frameworks are funding, human resources,

---

[25] This shows some similarity to how the NPO Law in Japan acknowledged the quality of "public benefit" as it applies to nonprofit organizations, not the organization itself but as demonstrated in their specific activities as stated in the Law.

[26] Exceptions are for religious and foreign organizations.

partnerships with other stakeholders, and other forms of backing as an ecosystem. Here we examine some

of the crucial supporting (and not-so-supporting) environmental elements for the flourishing of SOs in

China.

In the Reform and Opening era, local governments were held responsible for providing different

kinds of social services, but were also put under pressure to cut down on governmental structures and costs.

As a result, looking at the provinces of Shanxi, Hebei, Jiangxi, and Fujian, the percentage of total

expenditures on public goods fell from over seventy percent in 1970 to forty to fifty percent in 2000 (Tsai

2007:63). To solve this dilemma, they started to cultivate SOs[27] and contract services from them (Guo

2017:176; Yu 2016:65). In 2005, Beijing City officially introduced the public service procurement system

to build a "Harmonious Society," and invited SOs to provide community services to support ex-offenders,

youth, migrant workers from rural areas, and local volunteers (Koga 2010:139-145). Another case in

Shanghai city reported by Suzuki (2014:549, 551-552) is the city government purchasing a variety of

services including i. community services (social security, employment, health, elderly care, public

sanitation, local environment, cultural activities, a charity supermarket, free meals, etc.), ii. support for

local businesses, iii. social action support (petition support, legal aid, training), and iv. societal management

(management of migrant workers from rural areas living in the city, conflict mediation, adoption support).

The amount of services purchased totaled RMB 1.4 billion (USD 200 million) for the city, with another

RMB six billion (USD one billion) for eighteen districts under the city in 2010. Li (2018b:187) estimates

that services procured by local governments exceeded RMB fifteen billion (approx. USD two billion) in

2013.

To foster SOs with the capacity to meet these requests, some local governments have launched

their own nonprofit incubation programs. For example, when the author visited Shanghai city in 2014,

Rende Foundation had been contracted by the Pudong District government to manage the "Foundation

---

[27] According to Yu (2016:65), CPC Shenzhen City put up a large billboard with the slogan "Civil Society,
Develop Together" in 2008 to propagate the role of civil society organizations in city development.

Service Park" and was supporting twenty-seven new foundations working locally. The District also had the "Public Welfare Service Park" to support nonprofits and social enterprises.[28] Local governments including Beijing, Shanghai, and Shenzhen also conducted trials suspending the dual registration system in advance of the Charity Law and the decision made by the State Council at the national level in 2013 (Ma 2014:92; Hu and Guo 2016:231; Suzuki 2014:547, 552; Yang et al. 2016:2300). They functioned as an experimental ground for innovations, just as they worked for economic reforms during the Reform and Opening era.

Another driving force in the flourishing of SOs was the researchers and academics who were involved in NGO and nonprofit studies, and the related legal and philosophical issues surrounding them. Beginning with the establishment of the NGO Research Center in Tsinghua University[29] in 1998 as the first research center on NGOs in China, others followed including Peking University (Center of Civil Society; Center for Nonprofit Organizations Law), Beijing Normal University (China Philanthropy Research Institute[30]), Shanghai Jiaotong University (Center for the Third Sector), Renmin University (China Institute for Philanthropy and Social Innovation[31]), and Sun Yat-Sen University (Center on Philanthropy[32]). These research centers played diverse roles, from proposing plans for possible legal and regulative frameworks throughout the discussion of the Charity Law and other laws and regulations, training human resources in the nonprofit and philanthropy sectors, and developing information platforms for SOs (Ma 2014:83-86).

They also played a crucial role in developing numerous concepts and terminologies that were acceptable in China's political environment. As the CPC and the government started to view the word "civil

---

[28] Site visit and interview with Ms. Ivy Gu, then Rende Foundation (22nd Dec. 2014). Other organizations such as NPI are organizing "Social Innovation Parks" in dozens of municipalities (Li 2018b:148).

[29] NGO Research Center (NGORC), School of Public Policy and Management, Tsinghua University website: http://www.sppm.tsinghua.edu.cn/english/research/center/26efe4891f406f6b011f5ee4824e0041.html (Retrieved 21st Mar. 2018).

[30] China Philanthropy Research Institute website: http://www.bnu1.org/ (in Chinese, retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[31] China Institute for Philanthropy and Social Innovation, Renmin University http://spap.ruc.edu.cn/displaynews.php?id=9526 (in Chinese, retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[32] Sun Yat-Sen University website: http://www.sysu.edu.cn/2012/en/research/research01/index.htm (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

society[33]” with great suspicion, they translated it to the Chinese word "*gongming shehui*" [公民社会], which literally means "public people's society," and claimed that it includes the involvement of and interaction with the government and business, not only the social sector – thus it is interdependent and synergetic with the state and market systems and does not signal any confrontation between the state and society (Ma 2014:80, 86; Wang 2011:3, 10-12). When even *gongming shehui* became a "sensitive" word after 2011, authors like Wang Ming developed new concepts such as "*gongyi cishan*" [公益慈善] or "*gongyi quan*" [公益圈], which mean "Public Benefit Charity" or "Public Benefit Sphere" as a translation for the word "philanthropy" or "civil society," and expanded the meaning by including other social activities beyond the original words "charity" or "philanthropy."[34] These terms may seem like a bit like merely playing around with translation. But such manipulation of concepts and terms (mainly done in Chinese) had a crucial meaning in the development of policies which would be acceptable to the Party-government system, and in the creation of spaces for the legalization of SOs. Intellectuals also joined in to launch grassroots NGOs, think tanks, and other kinds of SOs (Li 2008; Li 2018b).

As a consequence, the CPC finally accepted the role of SOs in March 2014, with Premier Li Ke Qiang using a new slogan of "Social Governance" to achieve the fulfillment of social needs and participation of different stakeholders under the leadership of the government, and urging SOs to play a more active role in meeting those goals (Yu 2016:62, 66).

As a relatively recent phenomenon, we can notice that Chinese SOs are using information technology quite effectively and on a large scale. Since the beginning of the internet, it helped to connect people with similar interests and form SOs with specific areas to work on (Wang 2011:33). In 2011, an IT company called Tencent started WeChat, a social messaging service, to which an online-payment service

---

[33] The caution toward the word came both because of the Party-government system becoming concerned about foreign influence over NGOs, and because of Marxist terminology depicting "civil society" primarily as a phenomenon of the bourgeoisie.
[34] From Professor Wang Ming's Presentation at "2015 East Asia Civil Society Forum," Wuxi, Jiangsu Province, China (9th Oct. 2015).

called WeChat Pay was added in 2013, soon becoming a necessity for daily life in China along with the preceding service Alipay. WeChat also became a platform for people who are interested in social sectors to discuss, inform, evaluate, or donate to SOs through online forums, increasingly from mobile phones. For example, during the "*Gongyi 99*" [*公益 99*] campaign in 2017, RMB 830 million (USD 120 million) was collected from over twelve million people, together with RMB 300 million (USD forty-four million) from Tencent Foundation and RMB 180 million (USD twenty-six million) from partner corporations, for a total of RMB 1.3 billion (USD 200 million) in only three days. WeChat and other online platforms such as Alipay or Ant Forest are becoming a major tool for SO fundraising (Brennan 2017; Li 2018:63-65, 172-173).[35]

Information technology also works to share the information on SOs publicly. For example, the China Foundation Center website collects data on over 5,000 foundations and discloses it along with each foundation's "Transparency Index," which shows a score from zero to 100. Also, on each SO's website, it is becoming fairly common to show the names of online donors, even if it is for only one yuan on a real-time basis. Although such information disclosure can also be used by the government to monitor the SOs' activities, the accessibility to information is quite impressive. The active move of SOs towards increased transparency is accelerating fundraising and increasing trust from society as well as bringing in policy support. We can see that such innovative use of technology has made the information disclosure principle in the Charity Law possible.

The CPC and government continued to hold ambivalent feelings about SOs, both expectations for them to contribute to solving social issues and also suspicion about them being uncontrollable, and even becoming a potential threat to the regime (Kang and Han 2008; Tang 2012:198; Yu 2014:134). Therefore, the government policy has been a pendulum that swings from encouraging to controlling (Kang and Han

---

[35] According to a report published by the China Association of Fundraising Professionals, in 2014 over RMB 437 million (USD sixty-seven million) was donated through the top four online donation platforms, Sina Weibo, Tencent, Ant Financial and Alibaba. The total funds raised for Chinese charities was RMB 104 billion (USD sixteen billion) (CAFP 2015).

2007). The government and the CPC tried to control SOs through providing funding and in-kind support (like free office space), sending personnel,[36] setting up Party sections in the SOs, and in some cases chronically harrassing them (Suzuki 2014:541; Tsujinaka 2014:376). Even the enactment of the Charity Law does not signal their full support for civil society, as we can see through another Overseas NGO Management Law enacted in 2016 to ban the operation of all unauthorized foreign NGOs working in China (Jia 2017). On the other hand, Zhao, based on her observation of service-provision NGOs in Beijing, warned that SOs also tend to seek a connection with the government in order to receive protection and authority while outsourcing governmental functions (Zhao 2010:227-229).

The same holds true for virtual civil society. While "netizens" are claiming their rights and complaining about the corruption and wrongdoing of governmental officials, different governmental bureaus and departments are monitoring and controlling the information and individuals (Inoguchi 2014:60). Technological innovation does not automatically mean more freedom or more space for civil society (Ako 2012:56).

3.2.3 Analysis

As illustrated above, the development of SOs to fill the gaps created by the disintegration of socialist welfare systems first started at the central level in the 1980s, including the establishment of government-backed societies and foundations. But once the initial wave of momentum receded after the Tiananmen Square incident in 1989 and the following tightening control of SOs by the government, some local governments continued their experiments (often by offending the policies regulations set by the central government) together with local SOs and businesses.

And a noticeable feature of this case is the constant presence of groups from the civil society side who were willing to actively respond to the opportunities opened or suggested by the government side.

---

[36] This also functioned as an absorption of governmental officers who retired or lost their jobs in repeated government restructuring after the 1980s (Tsujinaka and Kojima 2014:23).

Especially intellectuals, who were marginalized during the Great Cultural Revolution, became leading figures and worked together with other groups, both with insiders in the Party-government system and with other groups such as newly emerging entrepreneurs and people from rural areas (Tang 2012:200; Wang 2011:43-38). Later, the younger, well-educated demographic who were born in the 1980s - 1990s, including those who had studied abroad, joined the sector (Li 2018b:62-63; Tsujinaka 2014:375). Although they utilized information and knowledge from foreign countries such as the U.S., Europe, or other Asian countries, their initiatives also look like a revival of the social responsibilities that were once fulfilled by the traditional Chinese scholar-gentry, who "take the nation's great tasks as their own"[*Yi Tianxia Wei Jiren* 以天下为己任] (Liu 2008:27; Wang 2011:43; Yu 2017:170-176). Businesses joined at a later stage by providing funding to government-approved frameworks such as private foundations and online platforms, together with the general public supporting SOs through volunteering and donations (Table 3.3). Thus, we may say that this is an interesting combination of top-down and bottom-up approaches, and alliances between (mainly) intellectuals, civil society, and different levels of government.

Table 3.3 Scaling Patterns and Paths for the Development of Social Organizations, China[37]

	Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutional-ization
Gov.	(conflict symbol)	(central gov.) Disruption	(local govs.) (SO regulations)	(central / local govs.) (Charity Law)
Businesses				
Civil Society		Re-started at local levels	(ideas brought from other countries)	Use of IT platforms

○ minor / ◯ : major involvement from each sector

☁ : new ideation

✸ : conflict with the initiative

---

[37] Details shown in Appendix 1.

☐ : legislation

○ : multi-sectoral alliance

However, we should not say this was a successful case without any concerns. One major risk factor is the gap between the resources and capacity SOs have (though already quite impressive) compared to the huge volume of social demands presented by Chinese society. If the government chooses to evade their responsibility of providing at least a minimum level of social safety net, SOs can now only cover limited areas (mainly major city areas such as Beijing, Shanghai, and Guangzhou) and issues (Yokohama 2012:82-83). Second, society's trust and support for SOs is still limited (Yu 2014:134), after major scandals involving financial mismanagement on the part of major SOs such as the Chinese Red Cross after the 2008 Sichuan Earthquake[38] (Ako 2014:199-200; Yang et al. 2016:2304). And finally, authors seem to concur (Suzuki 2014:537; Wang 2011:3; Yang et al. 2016:2298; Yu 2014:136) on the point that Chinese SOs exist in a different context from those in Western civil society, which are supposed to be autonomous from the government. Chinese SOs are under the strong guidance, supervision and control of the government, and we should not mistake the "grassroots" nature of some NGOs as a common trait of all SOs (Xu and Li 2008:12).

However, throughout the whole process of SO development, we can observe how SOs actively filled the major "vacuum" created by the work units and government's retreat from providing social services (Liu 2008:27; Yang et al. 2016:2294; Zhao 2010:229). Or in other words, it is also a process of different sectors coming to negotiate, cooperate, and co-govern the "public space" within the given context of the post-Reform era, to resolve the turmoil caused by the huge amount of inequality and frustration within Chinese society (Tsujinaka 2014:376-382). For instance, authors provide the different examples of public health system reform (Ma 2014), statements of protest from lawyers (Ako 2012), and incremental

---

[38] The most infamous case is the "Guo Meimei case", a case which raised questions on the management of donations collected by the Chinese Red Cross – caused by an internet celebrity showing her luxurious life.

103

co-governance mechanisms developed in Hangzhou city (Wang and Liu 2017). This has the potential to affect the principle of the governance mechanisms in the Party-government system, as we can see in the new logic behind the Charity Law.

The emerging of SOs in China may be showing, as Li (2018b:28) claims, the importance of "bottom-up" elements in Chinese society. If that sounds too optimistic, it seems to be safe at least to say that SOs have successfully shown their presence in society as a crucial part of "socialist consultative democracy[39]" to deal with social tensions and problems, as President Xi reported in the Nineteenth National Congress of the CPC in October 2017. Again, it is still unknown whether the SOs have the capacity to solve the various needs within Chinese society, but as an SI process, we may conclude that i) it is a clear example of the process that is changing the relationships and resources distribution within the society, and ii) the effort is functioning to address and tackle diverse issues in the society.

3.4 Summary

The development of SOs in post-reform China shows us an example of how "alliance" of different sectors and groups including intellectuals, ex-party or government officials, business persons, and rural populations utilized the opportunities created by the post-reform crisis of welfare and social service provision, and how after many twists and turns, they expanded their space and resources within an authoritarian Party-government system. Even after the end of the initial "boom" in the 1980s, SOs continued to develop mainly on a local level and created a favorable environment including partnerships with local government, increasing online donation platforms, laws and regulations, and ideas, concepts, and values to facilitate the acceptance of the role of SOs by the Party-government system. In an environment cautious of any social sectors / organizations which may compete with the Party-state system, scholars and practitioners

---

[39] Xi Jinping's Report delivered at the 19th National Congress of the Communist Party of China (18th Oct. 2017). China Daily website: http://language.chinadaily.com.cn/19thcpcnationalcongress/2017-11/06/content_34188086.htm (Retrieved 4th May 2018).

developed various concepts and values in order to be endorsed by the system. And with the help of the

latest technologies to connect with public and government procurement systems, they were able to develop

their own resource mobilization channels as well as a new governance structure between the government

and society based on information disclosure as prescribed in the 2016 Charity Law.

Chapter 4: South Korea

4.1 Country Context

The Republic of Korea (hereunder "South Korea") became an industrialized country during the 1970s and 1980s under military rule and later transformed itself into a democratic country after the democratization movement of the 1980s. The 1997 financial crisis and the following structural adjustment program led the country to further globalization and growth, but also brought a concentration of economic power in business conglomerates (*chaebol*s) and big businesses, and an increasingly polarized society.

Facing severe inequality and poverty especially among the elderly and unemployed or irregularly employed youth in an economy with relatively weak social security nets compared to other developed countries, politicians, bureaucrats, businesses, and civil societies have been taking action and creating various policy frameworks to support marginalized groups by creating an environment more inclusive of those vulnerable populations, broadly labelled as "social economy."

4.1.1 Political System

Post-WWII South Korean politics has gone through major changes from colonial rule to military rule, and then to Democratization. In 1910 the Korean Empire was annexed to Japan and became its colony until the defeat of Japan in 1945. The occupation of the Korean peninsula was divided into the Soviet army in the Northern half and the U.S. army in the Southern half along the Thirty-eighth parallel north latitude. In 1948 the two parts separately declared independence as two republics, the Democratic People's Republic of Korea (North Korea) and the Republic of Korea (South Korea). The Korean War (1950-1953) caused millions of deaths, the division of families and immense damage to goods and infrastructure, and the ceasefire has left the two countries divided until now.

In post-war South Korea, anti-Communism became a national ideology under the first President

Lee Seung-man (Mun 2015:75). President Lee was brought down by a student protest in 1960, but the short-lived democracy was overthrown by a coup-d'état in 1961 by an army group led by General Park Chung-hee. After a short period of military rule, Park became the civilian President of the Third Republic in 1963. In the 1970s, facing the challenge of a democratic movement led by Kim Dae-jung, Park put the country under martial law and introduced a new *Yushin* (meaning "renewal") Constitution in 1971.

A distinctive and enduring feature of South Korean politics is the strong confrontation between the so-called "progressive" and "conservative" camps. The former advocates for independence from U.S. influence, the unity of Korean people (unification with North Korea), and equitable economy. The latter defends the alliance with the U.S. and the free market economy. The two camps are strongly linked with regionalism within the South Korea, and the progressive was strong in the Southwest region (*Honam*), while the conservative had its stronghold in Southeast (*Yeongseo*),[1] with for example President Park originally coming from (and supported by) *Yeongseo* and his rival Kim Dae-jung from *Honam* (Onishi 2015:6-8).

After the assassination of President Park in 1979, the democratization movement became active during the 1980s, even with oppression from the military regime represented by the Gwangju Democratization Movement.[2] And following the 1987 Democratization statement by President Roh Tae-woo, Kim Young-sam in 1993 became the first civilian and directly elected President after 30 years of military rule. The political landscape of South Korea changed further under two Presidents Kim Dae-jung (1998-2003) and Roh Moo-hyun (2003-2008) who took office after the 1997 financial crisis. As the first so-called "progressive" administrations, they increased the level of social welfare and also formally supported civil society organizations, including the enactment of the 2000 Nonprofit Private Organization Support Act

[1] For example, all the presidents during the military rule came from *Yeongseo*, which literally means "South of mountain" and includes areas such as Pusan and Ulsan. The region was also a strong supporter of President Park Geun-hye, the daughter of General / President Park.

[2] The Gwangju Democratization Movement was a mass demonstration in Gwanju city suppressed by military corps in May 1980 which led to hundreds of deaths. Kim Dae-jung was sentenced to death by the military government (Hashiya 2000:399-400).

(Akiba 2012:169; Isozaki 2004:67).

Later, pro-civil society policies were reversed by two Presidents from the conservative side, Lee Myung-bak (2008-2013) and Park Geun-hye. Park (2013-2017), the daughter of President Park Chung-hee, was impeached in 2017 after mass protests opposing a political scandal called "Choi Soon-sil gate," which referred to Park misusing her influence over business leaders to benefit a close friend. Moon Jae-in from the opposition party took office shortly after, becoming another President from the progressive side.

South Korean local governments have two levels. The first level is nine provinces and eight metropolitan / special cities. The second level is around 260 cities and districts dividing the first level. After the 1961 coup, local elections were suspended and the heads of local governments were appointed by the cabinet (for the first level) and provincial governors (for the second level) due to the concerns of the military government (Yeon 2012:50). After Democratization, Roh Moo-hyun introduced a decentralization policy to streamline the central ministries, and enacted the Special Law for Decentralization in 2004. The Law prescribed the principle of passing governmental functions to local governments, and expanding residents' participation in administrative processes including local referendums and volunteering (Cho 2007:27-30; Kang 2014:134). However, according to Yeon (2012:92-110, 173), the transfer of power and tax income to local government was delayed due to opposition from the members of the National Assembly who preferred to keep governmental funding as the source of their political power in their constituencies.

4.1.2 Socio-Economic Conditions

The severe destruction caused by the Korean War left South Korea as a largely agricultural country with widespread poverty, with a GDP per capita of only USD eighty-two in 1960 (Mun 2015:81-82). President Park Chung-hee turned the policy to a "developmental state" model, focusing on export-oriented industries under state-led economic planning, with support and loans from the U.S., Japan, and other Western countries (Seol and Haruki 2011:1). *Chaebols* (conglomerates) such as Samsung, Hyundai, and Daewoo were supported by the government as the drivers of the heavy and chemical industries (Hashiya 2000:366,

381-382). The annual growth rate reached an average of ten percent in the 1960s, which was called the "Hangang Miracle." The GDP continued to grow steadily (other than a short period where it dropped after the 1978 oil shock) from six to eleven percent per annum, and the GDP per population increased from USD 592 in 1975 to USD 10,823 in 1995 (Hattori 2005:4, Mun 2015:95-98).

During this period of rapid industrialization, the population moved to urban areas, and the urban middle class formed a considerably large group in the society. Urban dwellers and rural poverty continued to be an issue, but at the same time macro income inequality was kept to a moderate level during the 1980s and 1990s, as the Gini coefficient was 0.31 in 1993 (Hashiya 2000:383, Hattori 2005:12).

The 1997 Economic Crisis caused a major change to the country. For the first time in eighteen years, the economic growth turned negative, -6.7 percent in 1998. After the crisis, financial and industrial system reforms were implemented as a condition of the IMF bailout program, including: i) re-organization of financial institutions and industries, ii) pro-market reforms and deregulations in industries, international trade, and labor liquidation, and iii) creation of social security nets to support the poor and unemployed groups (Hwang et al. 2016:6, Matsue 2014:280). As a result, South Korea's economy represented by *chaebols* recovered quickly after the crisis and became fit for global competition. However, because of changes in industrial structure and increasing globalization, although their asset size was growing,[3] they did not create jobs in South Korea as before and this led to increased unemployment and polarization (Kim 2013:18).

Through what was called "growth without employment," the unemployment rate jumped from 2.6 percent in 1997 to 8.6 percent in 1999, and the poverty rate from five percent in 1997 to twelve percent in 1999 (Kim 2008:104-105). Moreover, the quality of work was deteriorating. For instance, among the total number of workers (24.4 million) in 2010, only 10.5 million (forty-three percent) were regular employees, while the other 6.9 million (twenty-eight percent) were temporary or daily workers, 1.3 (five

---

[3] According to Kim (2013:2), the ratio of the five major *chaebols*' (Samsung, Hyundai Motor, SK, LG, Lotte) assets to GDP increased to 48.6 percent in 2010 from 32.8 percent in 2002.

percent) unpaid (referring to low-paid in-house workers in small family businesses), and 5.6 million

(twenty-three percent) self-employed (Bidet and Eum 2011:72-73). Therefore, the poverty rate mostly

continued to rise after the crisis, even with a low unemployment rate, as shown in Figure 4.1. In particular,

severe poverty and social insecurity among groups including the elderly, women, and youth who are

unemployed or have low-paid temporary jobs (called "working poor") became a serious issue in society

after the 2000s (Defourny and Kim 2011:89; Kim 2016:156-158).[4]

Figure 4.1 Unemployment Rate and Poverty Rate in South Korea (1996-2007)
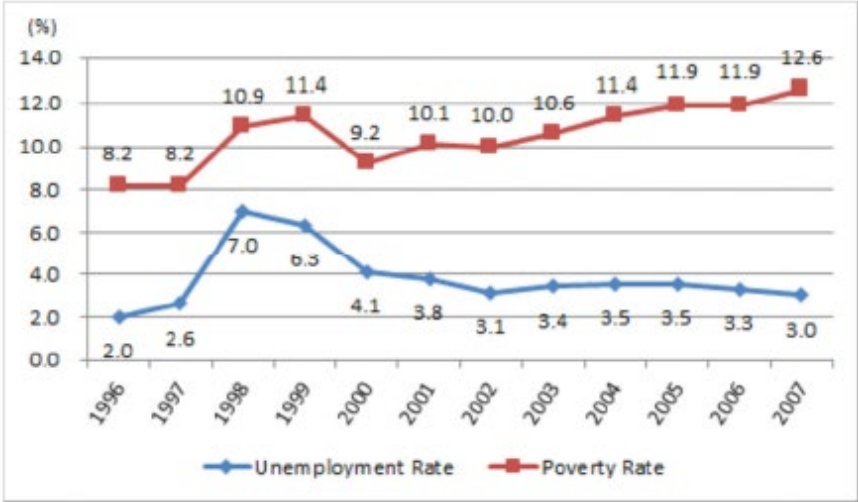
Source: Hwang et al. (2016:6)

Due to both a strong Confucian tradition and the policies implemented under the colonial rule of

Japan, welfare in Korea was mostly covered by family systems (Hyun 2011:129; Kwon 1999:31-32;

Matsue 2014:268). Social policies such as Livelihood Assistance Law (1961), National Health Insurance

Act (1963), and National Welfare Pension Act (1973) were first introduced during the time of President

Park Chung-hee. Nonetheless, the military government prioritized economic growth and showed reluctance

to increase welfare spending as shown in their slogan "Growth First, Distribution Later," and the

---

[4] According to Kim (2016:158), forty-seven percent of the elderly in South Korea fall under relative poverty, which is the highest in OECD countries.

implementation of these programs was slow or suspended, with the coverage limited (Peng 2009).[5] For

example, National Health Insurance was finally made a compulsory national scheme in 1977, but it covered

only 26.7 percent of the population in 1981 and reached sixty-nine percent only in 1988. Other laws and

schemes increased after the late 1980s, but the level of welfare expenditure remained at 5.7 percent of GDP

in 1995, much lower than other OECD countries ranging between fourteen (Japan) to thirty-three (Sweden)

percent. (Kim 2008:79-80, 87; Kwon 1999:93, 95, 143-144).

After the so-called "IMF Shock," with increasing business bankruptcies and layoffs, unemployed

workers occupied streets and public spaces. Also, the rapidly aging society and low fertility rate, weakening

family ties and increased participation of women in the job market all created an increasing demand for

social services (Jang 2017:2598; Seol and Haruki 2011:4). The government implemented a variety of job

creation programs and developed or expanded social support schemes under two "progressive" Presidents,

Kim Dae-jung and Roh Moo-hyung (Kim 2008:104-116). Kim Dae-jung replaced the Livelihood

Protection Act with the National Basic Livelihood Security Act in 1999, overcoming opposition from

bureaucrats by obtaining the strong support of civil society movements. The law introduced a welfare

system which provides income and housing support for the poor based on universal coverage, and the

proportion of beneficiaries (roughly 1.5 million persons) out of the total population reached 3.15 percent in

2007 (Jung 2009; Mendell et al. 2010:80-81). Still, following criticism from conservative politicians and

bureaucrats that large-scale welfare spending will be a burden on the national economy, the welfare and

pension payments remained low. As OECD statistics show, 2016 public social spending in South Korea is

10.4 percent of GDP, much lower than the OECD average of 21 percent (OECD 2016, Figure 4.2).

It also imposed a condition on the beneficiaries of the welfare payment who have the capability

to work that they join a self-support program, to link welfare with work and to minimize spending (Matsue

---

[5] For instance, President Park postponed the implementation of the National Pension Program after its
introduction in 1973 due to a high inflation at the time. It was finally introduced in 1988 but still the coverage
was limited, by only covering people who had made contributions for at least fifteen years (Kwon 1999:95, 98).

2014:289). With the attempts of President Lee Myung-bak's administration to keep welfare expenditure to

a low level, there continues to be a mix of schemes that provide universal coverage (medical insurance,

national pension scheme, long-term care insurance) but a low benefit level (Kim 2016:93-95; Takayasu

2014:12-13).[6]

Figure 4.2 Comparative Public Social Expenditure as a Percentage of GDP (1960, 1990 and 2016)
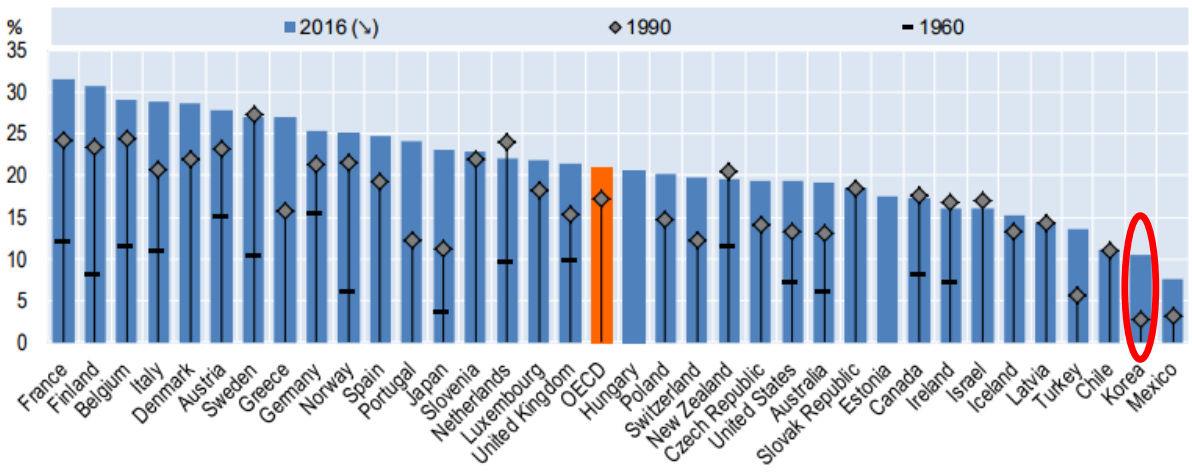
4.1.3 Civil Society and Social Movements

During the period of military rule, the South Korean government took an oppressive attitude towards civil

society organizations and allowed only government-led associations and cooperatives (Choi 2012:177-

181).[7] However, anti-military social movements including labor unions, student movements, and Christian

communities were strong during authoritarian rule (Kim 2000:60-61). They made a significant contribution

to the democratization movement in the 1980s and later continued to exert political influence in the form of

mass demonstrations, such as the 2008 demonstration against President Lee Myung-bak, or more recently

---

[6] For example, the monthly payment from National Pension Scheme is KRW 96,400, less than USD100 (Takayasu 2014:61).

[7] It was only in 2000 after democratization when the Act of Assistance of Non-Profit Civil Organizations was enacted and an entity for the general nonprofit organizations was legalized (Jang 2017:2595).

the protests that led to the resignation of President Park Geun-hye in 2017.

It was after the 1990s when South Korean civil society changed its members from a state-led corporatism to a diversified range of associations (Tsujinaka and Choi 2004:136). During the presidency of Roh Moo-hyung (which was nicknamed "Participative Government"), civil society members had a major impact on policy advocacy, and also joined governmental committees to lead the policy formation process (Lee 2012:133). However, this group tends to work less on direct provision of social services. Park Won-soon, who was a lawyer and a social activist who led People's Solidarity for Participatory Democracy (PSPD) movements and later became the Mayor of Seoul Metropolitan Government, compares Korean and Japanese civil societies by saying "Korean society tends to think big and move dynamically, thus changes are fast. Japanese society's strength is that they are very detailed and can move on small experiments." (Park 2012:25).

There is another group in civil society in South Korea that has focused more on directly providing education, medical and other kinds of services since the time of the military regime. They are mostly connected to the business sector (such as Samsung Welfare Foundation or Asan Foundation established by the Chung family, the founders of Hyundai) or to religious groups, and basically respond to the government's requests to supplement social services (Kim and Hwang 2002:3). Onishi endorses this division by stating that South Korean civil society has two groups, i) the politically progressive group which work more on political advocacy and ii) the more conservative group which provides direct welfare services, based on the data collected by K-JIGS2 survey led by Tsujinaka (Onishi 2014:120-134).

4.2 Case Analysis: The Development of Social Economy

4.2.1 Background

In this chapter we deal with the development of social economy organizations including social enterprises, cooperatives, and other forms in South Korea as a social innovation initiative case study. According to scholarship led by Defourny and Develtere, who initiated EMES (*L'Emergence de l'Enterprise Sociale en*

Europe), a key network for social economy / social enterprise research in Europe, the historic origin of

social economy can be dated back to guilds, brotherhoods, and other forms of mutual-aid associations in

medieval Europe and elsewhere. Defourny and Develtere gave the definition of social economy as

organizations that are based on the principles of: i) placing service to its members or the community ahead

of making profit, ii) autonomy of management from governments, iii) a democratic decision-making

process based on one vote per person, not based on ownerships, and iv) the primacy of people and work

over capital in the distribution of revenue.[8] Since social economy, such as cooperatives, associations and

other not-for profit organizations or shared economy, is based on collective values and norms, it is often

placed in contrast with (or as an alternative to) capitalist economy (Defourny and Develtere 1999:4, 16, 19;

Tomizawa 1999:27).

   "Social enterprise (SE)," which describes an enterprise aiming for both social purpose and profit,

is one of the legal entities used by social economy-related organizations among other schema such as

cooperatives and nonprofit organizations. It is a legal status formally approved by legislation in a number

of European countries such as Belgium (1996), Finland (2004), Italy (2005), the United Kingdom (2005),

and Spain (2007). This legal status can be obtained by passing certain requirements to meet social purposes

and the interests of different stakeholders, such as some restrictions on the uses of surplus (Mendell et

al.2010:72; Yonezawa 2017:35-39).

   Apart from non-formal saving groups and the quasi-insurance system in traditional society, the

consumer cooperatives which appeared in the 1920s during Japanese rule represented the first cooperatives

in modern Korea. After independence, in the 1960s the South Korean military government set up

agricultural, fishery, and forestry cooperatives and *Saemaul* organizations[9] in rural areas, and put them

---

[8] According to Defourny and Develtere, the latter two (democratic decision-making processes and possible distribution of profit to support the members) make the difference between social economy and nonprofit (based on Salamon and Anheier 1997) approaches (Defourny and Develtere 1999:19).

[9] *Saemaul* means "new community / village." This was a government-led movement/organization in the 1970s to upgrade rural roads and infrastructure and to improve production through cooperative labor (Lim and Endo 2016:490; Hashiya 2000:383-384).

under state supervision.

Formal and informal credit unions and cooperatives emerged throughout the 1960s to 1980s as mutual support groups (Kim and Hwang 2002:3; Mendell et al. 2010:10-12). In the 1990s, a new wave of production community movements emerged to support the poor. Many of them failed (Akiba 2012:168), but others sustained and grew including Hansalim Consumer Cooperative, which was established in 1986 and grew to become a major distributer of organic products, having 540,000 households as its members and employing over 5,000 full-time staff in 2015 (Cheon 2018; Hansalim 2016:5). Other neighborhoods like Sungmisan *maul* (village) in Seoul started communal nurseries in the 1990s and this expanded to various cultural, housing upgrade, and other neighborhood activities (Kikkawa 2012:206-208).[10]

The Kim Dae-jung administration introduced the Self-support Program under the jurisdiction of the Ministry of Health and Welfare, based on the National Basic Livelihood Security Act in 1999 and operating under the slogan of "productive welfare." The program was an attempt toward work-welfare integration by engaging the poor in cooperative labor (as a condition for receiving welfare payments) with support from civil society organizations, some of them later becoming SEs (Akiba 2012:169; Shim 2011:159).[11] Another governmental initiative was the "Social Job" program introduced in 2003by the Ministry of Employment and Labor (renamed the Social Service Work Program in 2007), which was a pilot program to create jobs and provide social services in ten specific fields including integrated education for disabled children, after-school classes, and forest conservation, with the support of civil society organizations (Hwang et al. 2016:8; Mendell et al. 2010:83-84).

Social activist Park Won-soon, while introducing the agenda of "social innovation"[12] through the

---

[10] Cheon (2018:75-76, 79) describes the development of social economy organizations, the variety of services they provide (credit, consumer cooperative, production, community, logistics, education, medical and elderly care, cultural activities, and legal and professional services), and the network of such organizations as Wonju Cooperative Social Economy Network, which has 34 member organizations.

[11] The self-support program created more than 58,000 jobs and training opportunities for vulnerable groups by the end of 2004, but only 5.4 percent of participants have managed to earn a minimum living wage and stopped receiving welfare spending (Kabumoto 2006:127-129)

[12] The areas of SI the Hope Institute selected were: i) social invention, ii) community businesses, iii) community

Hope Institute, a nongovernmental organization which he led as the founder and an Executive Director (C. 2018), also became a social entrepreneur in the 2000s and launched the "Beautiful Store" to sell recycled goods and the "Beautiful Foundation" to collect donations from individuals and businesses and provide grants to civil society organizations and other social groups, by applying and modifying the models he saw in the U.K. (Oxfam), the U.S. (Goodwill and community foundations), and Japan (Seikatsu Club Co-op, WE21, and Workers' Collectives) (Park 2012:23; Ra 2015:iii).

4.2.2 Processes

The creation of the 2006 Social Enterprise Promotion Act was an epoch-making event as the first SE law in Asia. Since 2004, the Ministry of Employment and Labor (MoEL) has continued to propose making SEs a legal entity. The MoEL formed a taskforce in 2005 with academics (Dr. Hwang Deoksoon of Korea Labor Institute[13]) and civil society practitioners (Ms. Lee Eun-ae of Ewha Social Welfare Center / Work Together Foundation) to develop a draft of the SE Law (Lee 2012:134-135). Lee notes that the MoEL hastened to prepare the draft of the Law while Dr. Hwang and herself proposed conducting detailed research before drafting it (Lee 2012:134). This can be seen as a result of ministerial competition to have SEs fall under the jurisdiction of MoEL, not the Ministry of Health and Welfare who had been managing the Self-support Program since 2000. Hwang says the law was a "translated" version of the civil society agenda, which was aiming for a broader social economy concept with a European influence represented by Defourny and his group, such as democratic governance or distribution principles (Hwang et al. 2016:5-6).

The Social Enterprise Promotion Act (SEPA) passed the National Assembly in 2006 and came into effect in 2007. The aim of the law was to provide jobs to "vulnerable groups"[14] and integrate them

---

building, iv) social economy, and v) seniors' contribution to society (C. 2018;5).

[13] Dr. Hwang is known as the person who introduced the concept (with reference to the U.K. and European experience) of SEs to South Korea through a presentation he made in a 2000 symposium (Lee 2012:133).

[14] "Vulnerable groups" is a term used to describe people with low income, lack of education or work experience, the elderly, persons with disabilities, or those facing social discrimination.

into society, but it was missing the aspect of democratic governance emphasized by European literature. Thus, SEs were defined in the SEPA as "those companies that have been certified... that engage in business activities such as the production and sale of goods and services with the objective of achieving social goals, including providing vulnerable groups with social services or jobs, thus improving the local residents' quality of life" (Article Two, translated by Hwang et al. (2016:5)). Now the name "SE" can be used only by organizations[15] certified by the MoEL, and is categorized into five different types with different criteria for each category (Table 4.1).

Table 4.1 Types and Criteria of Social Enterprise in South Korea

Type of SE	Criteria
i. Work integration SE	SE that hires more than fifty percent[16] of employees from vulnerable groups
ii. Service provision SE	SE for which more than fifty percent[17] of service beneficiaries are from vulnerable groups
iii. Mixed-type SE	SE for which the percentage of beneficiaries and employees from vulnerable groups are both over thirty percent[18]
iv. Local community contribution SE (since 2011)	SE that focuses on contributing to one of the local communities decided by the Minister of Employment and Labor, and either more than twenty percent of employees or more than twenty percent of service beneficiaries are from that community
v. Others	Other types of SE which do not fall under one of the above categories and are approved by the MoEL's Expertise Committee

Source: Ra (2015:39-40)

---

[15] Organizations that can apply for the certification are: i) associative corporations, ii) non-profit organizations, iii) consumer cooperatives, iv) welfare corporations (Bidet and Eum 2011:77).
[16] Increased from thirty percent since 2017.
[17] Increased from thirty percent since 2017.
[18] Increased from twenty percent since 2017.

According to the Korea Social Enterprise Promotion Agency website (as of 2nd Nov. 2018), there are 2,030 SEs, 363 of them in Seoul.[19] Bidet and Eum analyzed the data of 251 SEs certified through 2009, and found that 43.8 percent were work integration type SEs, 29.2 percent were mixed, 14.7 percent were others, and 13.1 percent were service provision SEs. The areas of main activities for these SEs are social welfare (20.7 percent), environmental activities (16.3 percent), care services (13.1 percent), and others including childcare, education, health and culture (Bidet and Eum 2011:78; Kim 2015:189-196).

Certified SEs (and preparatory SEs) can enjoy generous support from the government, including i) tax benefits, ii) subsidies for personnel[20] and management costs, iii) loan provision, iv) expert consultation (management, finance, marketing, taxation, labor, and technology) and information provision, and v) priority purchasing of SE products by public organizations (Kim 2015:192-193; Ra 2015:40-46). Among these, the biggest benefit is the support of personnel costs. SEs can receive a maximum of five years of support (two years as a preparatory SE, three years as a certified SE) ranging from seventy to 100 percent of personnel costs. This accounted for ninety-seven percent of governmental expenditures on SE support in 2007, and seventy percent still in 2012. It created an incentive to be certified but also caused rent-seeking or cases of moral hazard such as SEs decreasing the numbers of employees after the initial five years period, or even going out of business once the period ended (Ra 2015:50-51).

According to Ra (2015:46, 49), 1,165 certified SEs are creating 22,533 jobs including 13,661 people (sixty percent) in vulnerable groups, including older people, unemployed youth, people with disabilities, North Korean defectors, and low-income people. However, sixty-five percent of SEs are work-integrated SEs, and only six percent are social service-providing SEs, far less in comparison to the sixty percent seen in Italy, and only one percent is local community service SEs. Hwang et al. (2016:5, 8) also

---

[19] Korea Social Enterprise Promotion Agency website: http://socialenterprise.or.kr/kosea/company.do (In Korean, retrieved 2nd . 2018).

[20] Three years for an SE (seventy to ninety percent of the personnel cost) and two more years for a preparatory SE (ninety to 100 percent), which means that a total of five years can be supported (Kim 2015:193).

note that the government's intention and support to use SE as its policy tool made SEs more dependent on the government. They also warn that when the majority of certified SEs are the work-integration type, it is not widely different from the Self-reliant Program focusing on job creation for the poor.

However, proliferation of legal entities and frameworks created by other governmental agencies created more spaces and options for people who are willing to participate in social economy organizations. After the enactment of the Social Enterprise Promotion Law, other ministries and local governments also established their own social economy organization schemes. Since 2010, Preparatory SE schemes were introduced to allow local governments and other ministries to approve organizations that do not yet meet the requirements for formal SE approval. In 2010, the Ministry of Interior and Safety created their own "*Maul* (community) Enterprise" scheme, and in 2011, the then-Ministry of Food, Agriculture, Forestry and Fisheries[21] developed another legal entity, the "Agriculture, Forestry and Fisheries Community Enterprise" (Kim 2016:195-196; Ra 2015:32).

One of the new articles of legislation that had the most significant impact is the Framework Act on Cooperatives (FAC) which was enacted in 2011 and went into effect in 2012. It was created as an umbrella law to allow setting up general cooperatives (aside from financial or insurance cooperatives) other than existing specific cooperatives (for example agricultural cooperatives) controlled by different government ministries.[22] The FAC created a specific category named a "social cooperative," which is a non-profit form of cooperative which does not distribute profit to its members. Cooperatives lacked the financial and other forms of support from the government that certified SE enjoyed, but the number skyrocketed, as 8,289 cooperatives were created in the first three years after the FAC was passed, including 362 social cooperatives. Their areas of operation differed from agriculture, manufacturing, environment and energy, education, culture, and social services. Around 100,000 people participated in cooperatives

---

[21] Renamed the Ministry of Agriculture, Food, and Rural Affairs in 2013.

[22] Since the military regime, different laws for specific cooperatives (Agricultural Cooperatives (1957), Fishery Cooperatives (1962), Forestry Cooperatives (1980), and Credit Cooperatives (1972)) existed (Ra 2015:30).

creation and invested KRW 130 billion (USD 118 million) (Jang 2017:2602-2605). Cheon (2018:76) and

Hashimoto (2017:38-45) both describe the medical and elderly care services provided by cooperatives,

which illustrates how these organizations are fulfilling the emerging needs of a rapidly aging society.

Hwang et al. (2016:13-16) also describe what they categorize as "alternative-economy SEs," who

work on new issues (alternative energy, community-based finance, fair trade, community housing, local

food, etc.) and have become drivers of social innovation. Most of them take the form of social cooperatives

accepted by the FAC, which allows them to utilize democratic governance structures. This shows how civil

society and communal actors in South Korea including those who are excluded from the old economic

systems such as the self-employed, freelancers, early retirees, and unemployed youth are responding to the

different opportunities opened to them and utilizing their entrepreneurial capacities (Jang 2017:2605).

Another group that strongly influenced social economy organizations was *chaebol*s

(conglomerates) and other big businesses.[23] Hwang (2016) reports about several corporate social

responsibility (CSR) initiatives that are funding or working with SEs to provide services to the

disadvantaged population. Moreover, since 2014, LG and SK both established multi-million dollar funds to

invest in SEs, especially in the "social venture" types of SEs rather than grassroots-oriented ones,

partnering with Social Solidarity Bank and Korea Business School respectively.[24] Apart from business

itself, there are several high-net worth individuals (the founders, or second- and third-generation family

members) setting up investment funds, such as C Program established by five IT start-up billionaires,[25] or

Root Impact from Chung Kyungsun of the Hyundai Group family.[26]

---

[23] For this section I am extremely grateful to Ms. Park Sun Min, who kindly introduced various activities carried out by *chaebol*s and other business actors, as well as providing sources. However, the views and assessments of those activities are the author's own, including any misunderstandings.

[24] *The Korean Herald*. 26 Oct. 2014 "LG Electronics, LG Chem to support social enterprises" http://www.koreaherald.com/view.php?ud=20141026000252 (Retrieved 24th Apr. 2018); The Happiness Foundation website: http://www.skhappiness.org/eng/innovation/training.do (Retrieved 24th Apr. 2018)

[25] *Korea Joong-ang Daily*. 29 Nov. 2014 "Start-up Leaders Launch a Fund to Give Back" http://mengnews.joins.com/view.aspx?aId=2997911 (Retrieved 24th Apr. 2018)

[26] Root Impact website: http://rootimpact.org/en/intro.php (Retrieved 24th Apr. 2018)

Also, apart from big companies sending their employees to SEs pro bono, SK, a major

conglomerate group, has been supporting various postgraduate education and incubation programs for

social entrepreneurs since 2013, including Social Entrepreneur MBA KAIST Business School (KAIST

Social Entrepreneurship MBA Course / SK Social Entrepreneur Center),[27] Ewha Womans University

(Social Economy Collaboration Courses for masters and doctorate degrees),[28] Hanyang University, Soonsil

University, and Pusan National University (Happiness Foundation 2018:19). Some of them turn their own

subsidiaries into social enterprises, such as Happynarae, which turned from a SK subsidiary working on

maintenance, repair, and operation distribution, to a "social enterprise that helps social enterprises,"[29] or

Beans and Berries coffee shop developed by Hanwha group, which changed into an SE.[30]

These contributions may be seen as support for social economy as part of large corporations'

CSR activities, or their willingness to give back to society. Otherwise, this trend may also be viewed as a

move to take advantage of the new business opportunities being created by social enterprises and other

social economy organization schema.

As described above, local governments were given the power to approve preparatory SEs that

contribute to their local communities in 2010. Some local government took further steps to promote the

social economy environment in their district after the 2010 local elections, where the majority of governors

and mayors came from opposition parties labelled the "progressive" side (Onishi 2014:241).

Chungcheongbuk-do province was the first to set their own ordinance to support social economy, and by

2012 had twenty-six certified SEs and thirty-four preparatory SEs. Nineteen are in service provision

(domestic and care works), fifteen in production of goods, forty are private companies, and ten are

---

[27] KAIST website: https://www.business.kaist.edu/programs/02040601 (Retrieved 24th Apr. 2018)
[28] Ministry of Employment and Labor website:
https://www.moel.go.kr/english/poli/poliNewsnews_view.jsp?idx=1424 (Retrieved 24th Apr. 2018)
[29] Happynarae website: http://en.happynarae.co.kr/ (Retrieved 24th Apr. 2018).
[30] *The Korean Herald*. 28th Mar. 2013, "Hanwa to Turns Cafes into Social Enterprise"
http://www.koreaherald.com/view.php?ud=20130328000202 (Retrieved 24th Apr. 2018). The article says the
Work Together Foundation is partnering with Hanwha to change the coffee shop chain into a social enterprise.

nonprofits (Kim 2015:199).

The most likely candidate for champion of regional social economic policy in South Korea is Mayor Park Won-soon of the Seoul Metropolitan Government (SMG), who has already been mentioned above as a social activist / social entrepreneur. He became the Mayor in 2011 by special election and launched major reforms based on principles of participatory governance and social innovation (Lee 2017:18-19).

The SMG already had a SE promotion program since 2009, but a new "Comprehensive Social Economy Support Plan for the Creation of a Sustainable Economic Ecosystem" was launched in 2012 after holding discussions with stakeholders including local civil society members. This declared a clear shift "from supporting labor costs to forming an ecosystem,"[31] and since then related social economy policies have included: i) municipal ordinances to support fair trade (2012), cooperatives (2013), public purchases and marketing support for the products of social economy organizations (2014), social economy (2014), ii) the establishment of intermediary support organizations (Seoul Social Economy Center, Social Enterprise Development Center, Co-op Consultation Center,[32] Seoul Social Innovation Park), iii) the formation of peer networks for social economy organizations (Seoul Association of Social Enterprises, Seoul Social Economy Network, Seoul Community Enterprise Council, Seoul Regional Cooperative Association, and Seoul Community Business Association), iv) support for *maul* enterprise and communal activities, based on a model taken from the Sungmisan maul movement, v) the creation of a Social Investment Fund, vi) promotion of sharing economy, with a branding of "Sharing City," vii) the Local Social Economic Ecosystem Development Project, based on borough-level partnerships between local governments, social economy networks, and civil society, viii) the creation of Social Economy Zones, and ix) public purchases of social economy products (Seoul Innovation Center 2017; Seoul Metropolitan Government 2015).

---

[31] "From supporting labor costs to forming an ecosystem" page, SMG website: http://english.seoul.go.kr/policy-information/economy/social-economy/2-form-ecosystem/ (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).
[32] "What is co-op?" page, SMG website: http://english.seoul.go.kr/policy-information/economy/social-economy/3-co-op-city/ (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

Two major achievements were evident by 2015, according to SMG's report submitted to the Global Social Economy Forum (GSEF 2016). First was the growing number of social economy organizations - the SMG had 433 certified or preparatory SEs, 2,267 cooperatives, and 119 *maul* enterprises by the end of 2015. Figure 4.5 shows the annual increase since 2010, and we can see that the number of cooperatives is growing faster than SEs. Second was the increasing value generated by social economy organizations – an annual revenue of KRW 1.64 trillion (USD 1.5 billion) with 17,900 new jobs, both amounting to 0.4 percent of local GDP and employment.[33] Still, the support for SE labor cost subsidies decreased during this period, from KRW 22.7 billion for 400 SEs in 2011 to KRW 5.8 billion for 217 SEs in 2015 (GSEF 2016:24-27, 33, 36, 41, 49, 52, 81-83; Jung et al. 2015:8; Seoul Metropolitan Government 2015:13-14).[34]

Figure 4.3 Annual Growth of Social Economy Organizations in Seoul
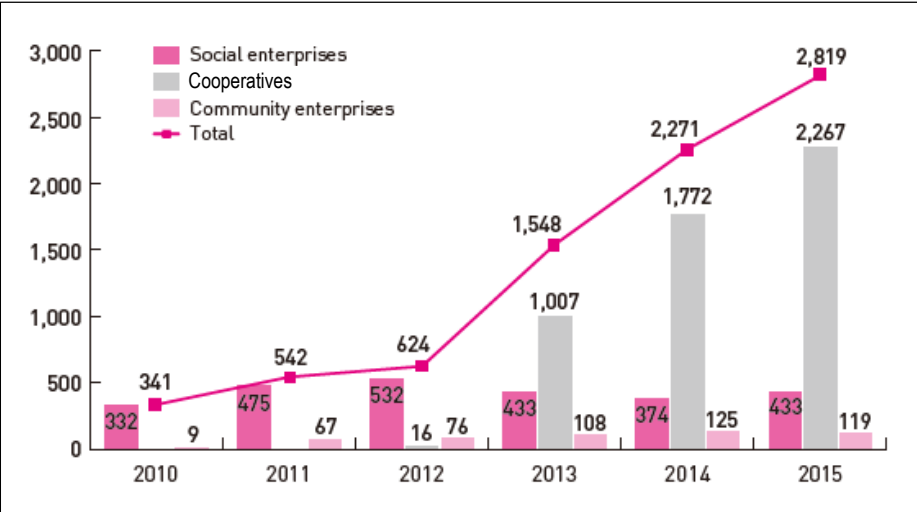
Source: Revised from GSEF 2015:34

---

[33] This is still quite low compared to the targets that had been set (two percent of the GDP, eight percent of employment – benchmarked against the U.K. social enterprise sales (two percent) / employment (five percent) ratio). "What's a Seoul-type social enterprise?" page, SMG website: http://english.seoul.go.kr/policy-information/economy/social-economy/1-social-economy/ (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).
[34] GSEF (2016:34-35) explains the decrease as the period when SEs can receive support (up to three years for certified SEs, and up to two years for preparatory SEs).

Furthermore, Ra (2015:102-103) emphasizes that another aspect of the SMG policy of focusing on *maul* (community/village) is that it helps provide social capital in local communities, which is crucial for South Korean communities with weak capacity to conduct mutual-assistance activities.

Another change brought by Mayor Park is bringing his colleagues from civil society into the SMG systems and creating borough-level partnerships, which created closer coordination between the local government and civil society. However, there is also a concern that the capacity of civil society has been "drained" by the SMG.
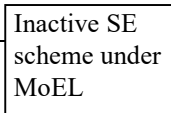
It is significant that Mayor Park's ideas and the values behind these policies come from his background as a civil society activist. In an interview before he was elected as a mayor, he criticized the governmental approach of only focusing on the number of jobs or organizations created by SE support, and proposed building an ecosystem surrounding SEs and nonprofits. He also stressed that alternative values such as civic-centered, bottom-up, field-oriented, and local-oriented should be brought into policies. In the interview he also mentioned the influence of Geoff Mulgan of the Young Foundation in the U.K. and community development practices in Japan (Park 2012:14, 31).

4.2.3 Analysis

As a social innovation process, social economy in South Korea had appeared beginning in the 1970s, characterized as local efforts by social movements and communal activities. It held a marginal position in the economy until the 1997 IMF crisis shocked the entire society and the need for social support and decent jobs became widely recognized. Together with concepts of social economy and social enterprise introduced from Europe, the idea gained wide support as a cure for the situation. Through two "progressive" Presidents with civil society backgrounds, Kim Dae-jung and Roh Moo-hyung, pilot programs managed by central ministries and implemented by civil society organizations were conducted in the early 2000s. Later, the MoEL established the SE certification scheme in 2006, but the top-down support system focusing on creating jobs resulted in inactive SEs doing little more than receiving government subsidies and employing

people from disadvantaged groups. However, the emergence of different social economy organization

schemes both on central and local levels, including cooperatives and *maul* enterprises, helped civil society

actors to expand the ecosystem, together with the active involvement of some local governments such as

the Seoul Metropolitan Government led by Mayor Park Won-soon. As a whole, this is a process led mainly

by a partnership of civil society and governments, with some key persons moving across sectoral

boundaries, such as Mayor Park who turned from a civil society activist to the mayor of the biggest city in

South Korea (Table 4.2).

Table 4.2 Scaling Patterns and Paths for Social Economy, South Korea[35]

	Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutional-ization
Gov.	✸	◖ (central ministries)	◖ (MoEL) □ (SEPA)	◯ (central / local govs.) □ (different legislations)
Businesses	✸	→	Inactive SE scheme under MoEL	◌ (private businesses and *chaebol*s)
Civil Society	◯ → (communal / mutual support activities)	◖ (pilot programs) ☁ (SE idea brought from Europe)	◖	◯ (different legal entities)

Shared sense of crisis by "IMF Situation" (annotation between Stage 1 Gov. and Businesses)

Proliferation of schema (cooperatives, etc.) (annotation at Stage 4)

◌ minor / ◯ : major involvement from each sector

☁ : new ideation

✸ : conflict with the initiative

□ : legislation

▢ : multi-sectoral alliance

The idea of social economy in South Korea did not mean the same thing for different groups of people, and

its origins were diverse. As we have seen, the tradition of anti-capitalist, anti-authoritarian social

movements which existed since the military regime and engaged in cooperative labor as mutual support

---

[35] Details shown in Appendix 1.

groups among the poor was one point of origin of the idea of social economy in South Korea (Jang 2017:2600-2601). However, it was not something acceptable to conservative groups in the society and was kept marginalized from the mainstream. One factor which helped to gain bipartisan support was blending the idea with concepts of social economy and SE introduced from European countries and the U.S. Since the early 2000s, a number of South Korean academics, policy-makers, and civil society activists visited Western European countries and picked up the concepts and practices of social economy, social enterprise, and cooperatives.

As a result, after the IMF crisis, both conservative and progressive groups began to expect SEs and social economy to solve the intensifying social issues in South Korea and agreed to support the initiative. Or in other words, because of the ideological confrontation between the two different camps while facing the need for increasing social services, agreeing was an easier option for both sides than taking other and more drastic measures, such as fully reforming the economic system or raising the level of social welfare provision by placing additional financial burden on the national economy. For instance, both the conservative and progressive party presented a draft for the Basic Law on Social Economy, but the values of social economy shown in the two drafts (increasing social services and welfare, creating employment, strengthening local communities, other contributions to societal public benefit, etc.) overlapped to a significant extent (Ra 2015:4-5).

This compromise led to the first legalization of SE in Asia (Defourny and Kim 2011:91; Hwang et al. 2016:4), and further development of social economy in South Korea. We can say that this was a creative manipulation of an idea, making it more acceptable for a wide range of social groups.[36] The idea was also fortunate to receive strong support from some key political figures including Kim Dae-jung, Roh Moo-hyung, and Park Won-soon, who had civil society backgrounds and strong affinity for the idea.

Such bipartisan support created a favorable environment for social economy-related policies, but

---

[36] Although as we saw in the case of SE certification, it may result in "losing" some of the core values of social enterprise / social economy as a result of negotiation between different groups.

SEs also became a tool for governmental policy implementation and lost the independence from the state that was emphasized in the Western concept. Since the government-led SE scheme focused primarily on job creation for disadvantaged groups, together with generous subsidies from the government, it led to the inactiveness of certified SEs (Jang 2017:2602). It may be seen as a case of "state-led" top-down processes with a weak civil society, as some authors observe (Defourny and Kim 2011; Mendell et al. 2010).

Still, the proliferation of schemes for different social economy organizations, especially (social) cooperatives and the partnerships between some local governments and civil society provided broader spaces in society for different social groups, allowing for more innovative initiatives (Hwang et al. 2016:6). Therefore, if we look at the whole landscape of social economy in South Korea – not only the MoEL-certified social enterprises scheme – it appears more fruitful.

Still, it is too early to decide whether local governments' social economy experiments will be able to take root and achieve the building of a more inclusive economy in regional areas, but at least compared to central government policies, it seems to be obvious that local governments are in a better position to reflect the reality of their communities and to develop local partnerships between different sectors. Perhaps the big question is whether there are grassroots initiatives to respond to the local governments' policies, as otherwise it will be another government-driven and government-dependent program.

Although Jung et al (2015:5) point out the "success" of "government-managed and government-directed" social enterprise promotion policies in the Seoul Metropolitan Government, we may need to see what will happen to the ecosystem that has been developed after Mayor Park leaves office.

4.3 Summary

Social economy development in South Korea was born out of the 1997 Financial Crisis and the following economic reforms (the "IMF Situation") which created serious issues and concerns in a society with rather weak social safety nets, thus creating an opportunity for agreement on bipartisan social economy support

policies to tackle the situation at hand. Ideas originating both in South Korean civil society and in European concepts framed the policies in central and local governments, with the support of political leaders who had civil society backgrounds. Although the social enterprise promotion policy led by the Ministry of Employment and Labor seems to be ineffective, by providing too many subsidies mainly for the purpose of creating employment, the proliferation of schemes and legal entities for social economy organizations such as "social cooperatives," *maul* (community) enterprises, and others have created more options for people. Some local governments such as the Seoul Metropolitan Government are focusing more on creating a local environment that facilitates the activities of social economy organizations. These efforts seem to be more promising at the local level, with less governmental control but with supportive ecosystems and networks for social economy organizations.

Chapter 5: Indonesia

5.1 Country Context

Indonesia, a country which boasts the fourth largest population in the world with over 250 million people and is the largest Muslim nation, has demonstrated a relatively stable democracy after the end of authoritarian rule under President Suharto at the end of the 1990s. It is also an example of a country whose unity has been successfully maintained despite its multiple ethnicities, languages, and cultures spreading over thirteen thousand islands (Figure 5.1), well-known as the Indonesian national slogan "unity in diversity (*Bbhineka tunggal ika*)".

Figure 5.1 Map of Indonesia

Source: Google Maps

After the end of Suharto's "New Regime" era, Indonesia went through a major governmental decentralization process – according to a report by the World Bank, a change from "one of the most centralized countries in the world into one of the more decentralized ones" (World Bank 2003). This chapter analyzes the process of government decentralization, including why it was needed, how it happened, and what emerged in its aftermath.

5.1.1 Political System

The territory of independent Indonesia came largely from the colonial Dutch East Indies, which were nationalized as colonies of the Netherlands in 1800 after being held by the Dutch East India Company. In the 1920s, nationalist movements in the colony represented by *Sarekat Islam* and its leader Oemar Said Tjokroaminoto started to aim for independence as Indonesia with "one nation, one people, one language," setting Malay (*Bahasa Indonesia*) which was used as a *lingua franca* in the region, as their national language, instead of Javanese, which was spoken by the biggest group in the population (Shiraishi 1997:7-12). *Pancasila*, which means "five principles" and consists of belief in God, Indonesian national unity, humanitarianism, Indonesian-style democracy through consultation and consensus, and social justice - were positioned by Sukarno and others including religious leaders as the philosophical foundation of the nation (Ramage 1997:11-13).

Following a brief occupation by the Japanese Army during WWII (1942-1945), Indonesian nationalists led by Sukarno declared independence in August 1945. After the four-year War of Independence, the Dutch finally recognized the sovereignty of Indonesia in December 1949 as a federation of independent states. But soon thereafter in August 1950, President Sukarno proclaimed the Republic of Indonesia to be a unitary state with a provincial system[1] to guard against the risk of disintegration and separatism (Beittinger-Lee 2009:39; Ricklefs 2008:269-270). After a short period of democratic experiment and freedom, Sukarno declared martial law under the rule of "Guided Democracy" in 1957, and drew closer to the Soviet and communist Chinese bloc, also leaning toward supporting the Indonesian Community Party (PKI). After 1965 September 30 Movement, military led by General Suharto crushed the PKI and eventually came into power.

The "New Order" regime under President Suharto (1966-1998) presented themselves as the

---

[1] Later the local government systems were made uniform by Suharto with Law No.5/1974 on Standard Regional Governance and Law No. 5/1979 on Standard Village Administration (Holtzappel 2009:8).

champion of political stability and economic development, saving the country from the confusion of Sukarno's time. It lasted for thirty-two years and had a huge effect on Indonesia's political and socio-economic systems. Under Suharto as the highest patron, the New Order took a highly patrimonial and hierarchical, Java-centralized structure. The strong military involvement in politics (called "dual function" (*dwifungsi*) securing military seats in national and local parliaments) and the economy supported the system, and local governments were tasked only with implementing the projects coming from the central government. *Pancasila* was elevated to the national ideology, and by law all mass organizations were required to make it their sole principle, which meant denying any other cultural or regional identities as the basis for an organization. State dominance over society was accomplished by the restriction of political parties (PDI, PPP) and corporatism with Golkar (*Golongan Karya*), an association of groups, controlling social organizations and movements (Bunte and Ufen 2009:9-10; Shiraishi 2006; Vatikiotis 1998:60-61, 92-95). Military centralization and the oppression of separatist movements and human rights violation continued in areas including Aceh, Iriyan Jaya, and East Timor, which was occupied in 1975 (Kimura 2013:49).

Local governments consist of provinces (*provinsi*), and districts (*kabupaten*) and cities (*kota*) under the province. There are also sub-districts (*kecamatan / distrik*) and villages (*desa / lelurahan / nagari / kampung,* etc.) under the districts and cities. During the Suharto era, local governments were, as prescribed by the Law No. 5/1974 on Standard Regional Governance, basically a subordinate of central governmental offices and lacked the funding or personnel to implement their own projects. Villages were also defined by Law No. 5/1979 on Standard Village Administration to be a uniform organ (based on the village (*desa*) model in Javanese society) to implement governmental policies and to mobilize local people (Shimagami 2012:72-76)

Suharto's long-lasting New Order regime came to an end in 1998 after the Asian financial crisis, upon which reform (*reformasi*) and democratization (*demokratisasi*) processes including revising constitutional and legal frameworks and governance structures, and installation of free elections, freedoms

of speech, press, and associations took place (Bunte and Ufen 2009:23). After a few years of political

confusion during three short-termed Presidents, Bacharuddin Jusuf Habibie (1998-1999), Abdurrahman

Wahid (1999-2001), and Megawati Sukarnoputri (2001-2004), administrations led by President Susiko

Bambang Yudhoyono (2004-2014) and Joko Widodo (well known as "Jokowi", 2014-) finally brought back

a relatively stable political environment (Shiraishi 2010:9).

5.1.2 Socio-Economic Conditions

When Indonesia became an independent nation, its economy was still largely based on colonial plantations

and the mining industry, and foreign enterprises controlled strategic parts of the country. In 1960, President

Sukarno initiated the "*Benten*" Plan, which means "fortress," to build national industries within a foreign-

dominated economy, but it was soon abandoned amongst political and diplomatic confusion (Hondai and

Nakamura 2017:21-22).

Economic development advanced greatly during Suharto's time, with the help of Suharto's

advisory team of Western-educated economists and technocrats,[2] high oil prices in the 1970s, and foreign

investors and local (mostly Indonesian Chinese) entrepreneurs like Liem Sioe Liong (also known as

Sudomo Salim, a close friend of the Suharto family), who worked as agents for both Indonesian political

elites and foreign businesses. Under so-called "crony capitalism," the real GDP annual rate of growth from

1971 to 1981 averaged 7.7 percent (Ricklefs 2008:326, 344).

The growth under the New Order regime continued in the 1990s, averaging eight per cent annual

GDP growth until 1996. But the Asian Financial Crisis starting in 1997 caused a depreciation of the

Indonesian Rupiah and led to severe recession and inflation.[3] The Crisis triggered the fall of the New

Order regime. Consequently, Indonesia went through major reforms of its monetary, exchange rate, and

---

[2] The members of the Presidential Economic Advisory Team set up in 1966 were called the "Berkeley Mafia"
and later appointed to different ministerial positions under the Suharto regime (Hondai and Nakamura 2017:22).
[3] The GDP fell 13.1 percent in 1998 and it took until 2003 to return to the pre-crisis level (Michida 2005:60).

fiscal policies and structural adjustments to the banking sector and industries under the IMF Recovery

Program until 2003 (Lane et al. 1999:4-5; Michida 2005:58-61). Under the Yudhoyono administration

which began in 2004, the economic confusion was finally resolved, and growth rates recovered to around

five to six percent per annum from 2005 to 2014 (Hondai and Nakamura 2017:26).

Reflecting the trait of Indonesia being an archipelago stretching over 5,000 kilometers in area, the

diversity of cultures, ethnicities, and religions brings a certain amount of difficulty to the distribution of

resources, balancing of ethnic representation, and ensuring equality across regions. In particular, relations

between Java, an island which accounts for fifty-nine percent of the population, and other outer islands

continued to be a potential source of tension (Shiraishi 2010:9-11). According to the World Bank national

accounts data, Indonesia's GDP per capita (constant 2010 USD) in 2016 is USD 3,974, up from USD 2,084

in 1998, which makes it a middle-income country according to the World Bank classification.[4] According

to the national standards, the poverty rates are 9.9 per cent in urban areas and 16.6 percent in 2010, both

lower than 21.9 percent and 25.7 percent in 1998. Still, the poverty rates differ between provinces, where

the rural poverty rate reaches over twenty-five percent in Papua and West Papua, and around fifteen percent

in Ache, Maluku, and East Nusa Tenggara in 2009, which are all from "outer island" areas (Hondai and

Nakamura 2017:107-115).[5]

5.1.3 Civil Society and Social Movements

Pre-modern societies in Indonesia had self-help and mutual support groups and associations, such as burial

associations (*kelompok kematian*), funeral insurance groups (*beras perelek*), saving and credit groups

---

[4] "GDP per capita (constant 2010 US$) All Countries and Economies" page, The World Bank website: https://data.worldbank.org/indicator/NY.GDP.PCAP.KD?end=2016&start=1960&view=chart&year=1998 (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[5] Please note that these rates are based on a new governmental definition on poverty which began in 1996, based on different consumption baskets data. According to World Bank data, the poverty headcount ratio, defined as less than USD 1.9 a day (2011 PPP), was 6.8 percent in 2016. "Poverty & Equity Data Portal: Indonesia" page, The World Bank website: http://povertydata.worldbank.org/poverty/country/IDN (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018)

(*arisan*), and mutual-help (*gotong royong*) groups. In the early 20th century, modern associations like Budi Oetomo (1908), Muhammadiyah (1912) or Nahdlatul Ulama (1926) were formed to support education, and other religious and social issues in colonial societies, and some of them became involved in political and independent movements (Hadiwanata 2003; Nakamura et al. 2001:13).

The 1950s after Indonesia's independence saw a short period of associational freedom, but under the New Order corporatism, social organizations remained weak and fragmented. But after the 1970s, some NGOs such as Bina Desa or Lembaga Bantuan Hukum were established by the growing middle-class groups and slowly grew. The number of NGOs grew from a few hundred in 1970s to 3,000 in the 1980s, and to 6,000 by the mid-1990s (Beittinger-Lee 2009:70). This was made possible because the government also needed the contribution from these "development NGOs" to implement governmental development programs, for which the government itself did not have sufficient capacity. NGOs also received support from international donor agencies. In the 1980s and 1990s, advocacy NGOs (WALHI, ELSAM) and NGO forums (INGI, INFID) were established and raised "democratization" (*demokratisasi*) as their agenda. Abdurrahman Wahid (1999-2001) became the first president who was also a civil society leader (as the leader of Islamic organization Nahdlatul Ulama). Some authors observe that civil society organizations and social movements are impacting the policy-making processes at a central level in post-Suharto Indonesia with examples such as anti-corruption, the 2011 Social Security Law, and the 2014 Village Law (Nyman 2009: 252; Okamoto 2015a:169-171). However, NGOs' presence and mobilization power in local communities are rather weak due to their limitations including their dependency on foreign donors, lack of capacity and wide support from the public, and their own corruption (Beittinger-Lee 2009:123; Honna 2013:153).

It is worth mentioning the importance of Muslim civil society or organizations, which are growing in post-Suharto Indonesia as the providers of education and community services (Nyman 2009: 259). Beittinger-Lee (2009:26-27) points out that even the concept of civil society is becoming divided into a more Western-oriented way that stresses independence from the state (*Masyarakat sipil / warga*) and a

134

more Islam-oriented way (*Masyarakat madani*), which sees the ideal form of social and political

frameworks in the seventh century city-state of Medina (Azra 2006:39-40; Miichi 2004:123).

5.2 Case Analysis: Governmental Decentralization

5.2.1 Background

B. J. Habibie, who took over as President after Suharto's resignation, undertook major political reforms.

These included the release of political prisoners, securing the freedom of the press, political parties, trade

unions, and other associations, free election, and considering the autonomy or independence of military-

occupied East Timor. In the absence of military/authoritarian rule, the pressure from long-continuing

regional separatist movements were becoming strong, especially in Papua, East Timor, and Aceh. There

were also inter-group conflicts between ethnic or religious groups (Ricklefs 2008:382-390). Such risk of

national disintegration was the major cause of decentralization. Also, some politicians and bureaucrats in

the central government supported the idea of transferring power to local governments, with backing from

some international financial institutions and bilateral donors (IMF, the World Bank, the Asian Development

Bank, and German DFZ) after the economic crisis, to improve the quality of public services and to increase

accountability by bringing the services closer to the people (Buehler 2010:269; Hadiz 2010:10; Schulze and

Sjahrir 2014:186-187).

5.2.2 Processes

It was also Habibie's concerns about separatism which led to the radical decentralization process. And

being from South Sulawesi, one of the outer islands, Habibie publicly blamed the Java-centrist state system

(Buehler 2010:268). In the special session of the People's Consultative Assembly (MPR) in 1998, an

ambitious Decentralization Plan was approved, and in May 1999, two laws to fundamentally change the

relationships between the central and local governments were passed (Lewis 2014:136).

      The first was Law No. 22/1999 on Regional Government, which granted autonomy to local

governments. It transferred most governmental functions - apart from national defense, foreign affairs, finance, justice, religion, and few others saved for the central government - to the local governments, which were district and city level governments.[6] It also outlined the governance mechanisms of local governments and councils and released the district level government from the supervision of provincial level government (Holtzappel 2009:6-7, 11).

The second was Law No. 25/1999 on Intergovernmental Fiscal Balance. It stated that the central government was to pass a minimum of twenty-five percent of its revenue to local levels, of which ten percent goes to provincial and ninety percent to district-level governments (Buehler 2010:267-268). So far, nearly forty percent of central government expenditure has been transferred to local governments, and the revenue of local governments grew from IDR fifty-seven trillion (USD seven billion) in 2001 to IDR 120 trillion (USD fourteen billion) in 2009 in constant 2000 prices (Lewis 2014:137-138).[7] And in the 2016 Governmental Budget Plan, the expenditure of local governments was IDR 782 trillion (USD fifty-two billion), for the first time ever higher than the central ministries' expenditure of IDR 780 trillion (ARC 2017:64-65).

These two laws took effect in January 2001. The reform was done as a "big bang," without providing much time for preparation (Nasution 2016:1). Together they increased the political and financial autonomy of the local governments, mainly at the district (*kabupaten*) and city (*kota*) level. Also, national governmental offices at local levels (apart from courts and religious offices) were abolished and approximately two million people, or two-thirds of central governmental staff, were transferred to the local levels. And for the first time, the creation of new provinces, districts, and sub-districts was allowed.[8]

---

[6] The reform gave district / city level the most power, budget, and human resources. Provinces were largely bypassed since they were seen as a potential threat to national integrity by becoming a unit that could seek independence (Buehler 2010:268).

[7] "IDR/USD calculated by 2000 rate", Trading Economics website: https://tradingeconomics.com/indonesia/currency (Retrieved 2nd Nov. 2018).

[8] As a result, the numbers of provinces and districts/cities have increased from twenty-seven and 292 respectively in 1999 to thirty-four and 477 in 2010 (Schulze and Sjahrir 2014:191).

After 2005, district heads (*bupati*) were directly elected instead of being elected by the local

council, and by 2010 all heads were replaced with directly elected ones (Schulze and Sjahrir 2014:193).

Democratization through election was expected to improve vertical accountability to the local constituency.

Furthermore, in 2014 the government issued a new Law No. 6 / 2014 on Villages to increase the

responsiveness of local governments to community needs. Around 74,000 villages are now granted

autonomy from upper-level local governments and given access to a village fund (IDR 1 billion, which is

approx. USD 75,000) per year directly from the national budget (Antlov et al. 2016; Reality Check

Approach 2016). This was made possible by the long-lasting campaigns of village head groups requesting

more funding for villages and village officials, and other activists demanding rights and cultural autonomy

for indigenous communities as well as land rights (Shimagami 2012:99; Vel et al 2017).

The drastic decentralization process caused a certain amount of confusion and unintended issues.

Some of the major ones were: i) the arbitrary policies and decisions made by the newly-elected local

government heads without paying much attention to legal frameworks, or without coordination or

consultation with the neighboring local governments and upper levels, ii) corruption and misappropriation

of government resources by governors, mayors and local council representatives who could choose or

dismiss the local government heads, iii) the creation of new provinces and districts or cities in order to

obtain the resources allocated to it, which often showed poor performance in their administration, and iv)

the creation of new departments and positions at the local government and the increase of personnel and

administrative expenses (Ikawa 2015:35-36; Okamoto 2012:46-47).

Therefore, in 2004, Law No. 32/2004 on Regional Government and Law No. 33/2004 on

Intergovernmental Fiscal Balance revised the two 1999 Laws. The former, while establishing that local

government heads were to be elected through direct election, also placed some limits on the autonomy of

district / city governments and set some policy areas that they are obliged to implement together with

provincial and central levels. It also prescribed the supervisory power of provincial and central

governments over lower level governments. The latter provision gave the upper level governments the

authority to approve local governments' budgets and local taxes and fees (Ikawa 2015:30). It was a response from the central government (mainly the Ministry of Internal Affairs) to re-balance and fine-tune intergovernmental power relationships, and to secure the quality of services provided by the local governments (Mahi 2014:63).[9]

Also in 2014, after Jokowi was elected as the new President, 2014 Law 23/2014 was passed by Parliament, establishing that local government heads were to be elected by local parliaments, not by direct elections. This caused a huge amount of discontent and opposition in both online and off-line public debates, and Yudhoyono and Jokowi issued Presidential Orders / Laws to maintain the direct election of local government heads. This case showed a conflict of interest between the major political parties who sought to control local government heads through their majority in local parliaments, and the general public who had shown their preference for the direct-election system since 2005 (Ostwald et al. 2016:143).

There were some significant achievements as a result of the decentralization process. First, Indonesia avoided the feared disintegration of the nation and "balkanization" and the country stayed united with a limited amount of violence, other than ex-Portuguese East Timor's independence in 2002 (Kimura 2013:1). Shiraishi (2010:19) points out that this stability has been brought about partly by the birth of new provinces and districts / cities, in which a single ethnicity can more easily have a majority and control resources, thus reducing the chances of inter-ethnic / religious conflicts.

Second, decentralization made it possible to maintain cultural and regional identities for the first time in decades. The creation of new provinces and districts helped, at least for the new ethnic majorities that were created by the reshuffling (for example, the Banten people who had remained a minority compared to the Sunda people in West Java province before the creation of Banten province), to reclaim cultural and ethnic identity after the long years of oppression during the New Order period (Schulze and Sjahir 2014:191).

---

[9] Later the central government created the "Minimum Service Standard" (*Standar Pelayanan Minimal*) in 2008 to set minimum requirements for services provided by local governments (Okamoto 2012b:54).

Third, it opened up an opportunity for public participation and local-level democracy (Suharyo 2009:96). Mahi also points out that elections in Indonesia have been conducted successfully, with a minimal level of hostility and violence (Mahi 2014:59-60).

And fourth, although arguably, it has improved the delivery of public services by bringing it down closer to the people (Ostwald et al. 2016:140). Schulze and Sjahir (2014:196-198, 201-203) conclude, based on the extent of district-level infrastructure (middle schools, community health centers (*buskesmas*), and percentage of village with paved roads) and service delivery (net enrollment rate of secondary school children, percentage of births attended by professional staff, and percentage of households with access to clean water), that decentralization has increased local governments' responsiveness to the local population in all three of these areas. Mahi (2014) also highlights the improvement of local welfare and the efficiency of public goods provision brought by decentralization, which is measured by i) regional economic growth, ii) the changes in the local Human Development Index, iii) significant increase in education and health spending from local government budgets, and iv) the availability of local public facilities and infrastructure such as the number of local hospitals, roads, and schools especially in the outer island areas. Shimagami (2012:88) witnesses improved performance in village-level local administrative services, though seeing differences between regions.[10]

As a result of the direct election of local government heads, a number of "reformist" heads who implement innovative policies have emerged at different levels. Miharti et al. (2016) argue that the decentralization processes created more autonomy and space for decision-making for local governments and community health centers, and some of them managed to develop their own innovative policies like universal health coverage in Jembrana district, or introducing computer ultrasonography at Jagir, Surabaya

---

[10] However, we have no way to identify whether performance improved *because of* the decentralization process, or it improved *even with the (negative) impact of* decentralization. In other words, it may be true that performance may have been even better if Indonesia had kept its centralized system. But here we shall follow the scholarship noting the decentralization of Indonesia as a "successful case" of improving government service standards, compared to other countries.

city with the cooperation of both internal and external stakeholders such as politicians (mayors) and private hospitals and clinics. Among many others like Mulyadi Jayabaya in Lebak district, President Joko Widodo was also first known as the reformist mayor of Solo city for his innovative policies such as administrative reforms and free medical services and holding open dialogue with local people (Honna 2013:62-63; Okamoto 2012:58-59).

However, there are some limitations in the results as well as unintended side effects and controversial paradoxes as the result of decentralization. Research works on the subject tend to agree that the capacity of local governments remains largely weak especially when they are newly established, and reform initiatives are dependent on individual leaders (Buehler 2010:281; Lewis 2014:143). During the long years of the New Order regime, local governments were not asked to develop their own plans, policies, or projects, or to handle complicated financial arrangements with the central government or negotiations with foreign companies. Thus, many are not able to fully utilize the opportunities opened up by decentralization, even after a variety of support projects from the central government and international donor agencies. A report issued by USAID in 2009, among other authors, says that the quality of public service delivery has not improved significantly, or not as much as they expected it to (Pratikno 2011; Schulze and Sjahrir 2014:203; USAID 2009:90). Some authors point out that local governments spend too much (26.7 percent of the revenue in 2009) on general administration, which is higher compared to international best practice – or that it is sometimes misused for expensive buildings and cars, and overstaffing, and sees this being caused by a lack of downward accountability of local governments towards their consistencies (Lewis 2014:145, 150; Schulze and Sjahrir 2014:199).

Still, the majority of local citizens seem to be satisfied with the quality of services provided, which may be partly reflecting their attachment to local identities as well as low expectations for public service delivery (USAID 2009:164). According to a 2007 AsiaBarometer Survey, they also show greater

trust in local governments (29.3 percent)[11] than the central government (23.2 percent) (Pratikno 2011:279).

According to Lewis (2014:150), a large-scale survey found that seventy-eight, ninety, and eighty-five

percent of respondents answered that they are at least somewhat satisfied with the quality of local

administrative, health, and educational services respectively. As seen above in the case of the 2014 Local

Government Law, they are even responding to some recent efforts made by the central government or

political parties to re-centralize power, showing their contentment with the current electoral and

administrative systems.

Moreover, the new institutional settings and systems at the local level have been dominated by a

"new alliance" of New Order elites who were either bureaucrats, appointed governors / mayors, or military

officer during the Suharto era, together with local businesspeople[12] who have connections with local

governments, and local aristocrats and nobilities (Hadiz 2010:92-94; Schulze and Sjahrir 2014:191).[13]

They have reinvented themselves as party politicians to fit into new election systems (Mahi 2014:62;

Mietzner 2013:111-113). Often local gangsters (*preman*) and/or militia – what Beittinger-Lee calls 'uncivil

society' (non-governmental groups who have a negative influence on society, such as those involved in

drug dealing, human trafficking, or terrorism) - are used as their muscle, and some of them like Syamsul

Arifin who was a *preman*, even became elected politicians (a *bupati* and later the Governor of North

Sumatra) themselves (Beittinger-Lee 2009:20, 77; Ford and Pepinsky 2014).

---

[11] Comparing the AsiaBarometer 2004 and 2007 surveys, respondents' trust in local governments rose from 26.6 percent to 29.3 percent during the period. Trust in the central government dropped from 29.0 percent to 23.2 percent. Trust in local governments in Indonesia is also relatively higher than the regional average of 18.5 percent. It is interesting that the respondents also stated that the governments' performance in responding to issues is getting worse (economy, corruption, and crime) or not changing (human rights, quality of administrative service, and environmental protection) during the same time period (Pratikno 2011:278-280).

[12] President Joko Widodo (Jokowi) himself is well-known example of a local businessperson who climbed up the ladder as a politician, but Lane criticizes that his "hollow" campaign shows that he does not have a new and progressive agenda (Lane 2014: vii-ix). Okamoto (2012:59) reports that the local merchants who were removed by then-Mayor Jokowi from the center of Solo city to a market area on the outskirts had to close their businesses and questions the usefulness of his populistic approach.

[13] Beard and Phakphian (2012) have also reported a similar elite capture of community resources and the lack of transparency through community-based planning initiatives in a local community in Northern Thailand.

Okamoto provides a detailed observation on how the late Chasan Sochib controlled the politics of the newly established Banten province. He was the leader of *jawara*, a local martial arts group and the owner of a construction business with strong connection with Golkar and the Army. His family ultimately held the positions of provincial Governor and four district/city-level Governors or Vice-governors in the province. They used the identity and culture of the Banten people, violence and threats, and bribes and benefits through governmental projects to mobilize political support and control political parties, politicians, and bureaucrats. They even established their own NGOs and foundations to improve their reputation, while oppressing civil society groups and media who were against them (Okamoto 2015b).

These local elites and gangsters managed to transform themselves into democratic politicians or put their agents in the post-*reformasi* local governmental systems to capture the resources allocated to local governments. As money politics in regions grew, corruption such as kickbacks to politicians are becoming a normal practice, and corruption is "decentralized," but no less intense (Morishita 2015:29-30; Schulze and Sjahir 2014:189). Those who cannot play this game of money politics, such as farmers or workers, are excluded from these systems (Hadiz 2010:95).

And as the use of "identity politics" is increasing, it is becoming easier to condemn political opponents based on their ethnic or religious background – something which was carefully avoided in the history of the Republic of Indonesia. The most prominent case is Basuki Tjahaja Purnama (known as "Ahok") who became the Mayor of Jakarta after Jokowi left to take his position as President. A Christian of Chinese descent, he was known as a "reformist" governor but was charged with blasphemy for mentioning a verse from the Quran during his campaign, causing mass uproar from Islamic groups (*The Diplomat* 2017). If this kind of logic of playing identity politics to divide groups between "indigenous" and others, for instance to provide jobs first to "local" Betawi people in Jakarta as Honna (2013:184) reports, takes a greater hold in the future, it may ultimately damage the unity of the nation.

5.2.3 Analysis

As observed above, governmental decentralization started as a "top-down" process, coming as an emergency operation from the central government to keep the country from disintegrating and international organizations expecting administrative efficiency and improved transparency (Morishita 2015:27).

After 17 years since its implementation, the decentralized government and democratic election systems seem to have already taken deep root in the country – partly as a result of the strong alliances between local elites and other groups (businesses and "uncivil society" groups) to win the seats of elected local government heads and a majority of local councils and to control the resources allocated to local administrations (Table 5.1). Although this system excludes powerless civil society and ordinary people, as Honna states, a "paradox of democratization," democratization and decentralization in Indonesia are stable because the groups who hold a vested interest and power in local communities are basically happy about the situation and not willing to overthrow the system.[14] As Honna points out, "it would have been more unstable if it was cleaner, more egalitarian and transparent" (Honna 2013:200). Therefore, we may say that this is an example of a top-down approach finding strong response at the bottom and thus consolidating the initiative, no matter how vicious it may be.

---

[14] Hasegawa (2014) argues that local elites are starting to cover the request from non-elites to win fierce competition, and providing free education / health services and improving government efficiency as a policy. Perhaps these policies are helping satisfy local people about the result of decentralization.

Table 5.1 Scaling Patterns and Paths for Governmental Decentralization, Indonesia[15]

	Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutional-ization
Gov.	(Centralized system during the Suharto regime)		(central gov.) (1999 Laws)	(local govs.)
Businesses		Risk of regional separation after the crisis	Top-down policy with resource redistribution gets locally embedded	(local businesses)
Civil Society	(requesting as a reform agenda)			(support from local people and "uncivil society")

○ minor / ◯ : major involvement from each sector

☁ : new ideation

✦ : conflict with the initiative

▭ : legislation

▢ : multi-sectoral alliance

However, decentralization has not yet significantly changed the quality of public service provision as expected due to various reasons, such as the limited capacity of local governments, lack of vertical accountability to the local communities, and the weak pressure to perform from local citizens and civil society. Thus, we have to say that this was a success in term of its stability / embeddedness, but not fully achieving the expected results.

A part of the reason why the elections are not holding local government officials accountable as expected is the marginalized role NGOs or other civil society organizations (CSOs) play in local politics. Indonesian NGOs played a significant role during the *reformasi* and *demokrasi* period to challenge the legitimacy of the New Order regime and to fill in the gaps after the collapse of authoritarian rule, and they tend to influence national level policies as we saw in the 2014 Village Law process (Beittinger-Lee 2009:69-71, 123). Still they are largely based on the urban middle-class and do not have many links to

---

[15] Details shown in Appendix 1.

influence the local population, or local politics.[16] Without a wide basis of support, they depended heavily

first on Suharto's developmental programs and later on foreign donors' funding to implement their agendas

(Beittinger-Lee 2009:129-130; Okamoto 2015b:150).

For the decentralization process to bring the desired results, first it needs more eyes and pressure

from the public, with the support of civil society to set policy agenda, as well as to improve the capability

and accountability of local governments. Okamoto (2015b) finds hope in the way local activists in Banteng

province worked with an anti-corruption NGO in Jakarta, finally leading to the national Corruption

Eradication Commission's arrest of Chasan Sochib's children for bribery. Then there may be more chances

for regional governments to rightly utilize the political, administrative and financial authority given to

them, and to produce local-level service innovations as they already do in some areas.

With all the limitations, when we examine the process of governmental decentralization as a

social innovation process, we can see some significant changes compared to the pre-*reformasi* era apart

from i) the change of the central-local relationships and resources allocation, ii) the level of service

provision, and iii) the people's attachment to the new system. First, local people now have the power to

replace local government heads through election. Second, they have various grounds to request a certain

amount of services and accountability from local governments, ranging from commitments made by the

candidate during election campaigns, a national service standard which has a legally binding force, and a

national agency for anti-corruption. Third, there is the potential for local government heads who were

elected by local people to implement reforms which are rather independent from the local power elites.

These may be potential effects rather than the reality at the moment, but when we see how the

public responded to the legislated termination of direct election of local government heads in 2014 and how

it pushed back the decision, we can say that these changes have already gained a certain amount of

legitimacy in the society and people's mindsets. In addition to sustained changes and improved welfare, we

---

[16] According to a 2007 AsiaBarometer survey, Indonesians show much stronger trust in religious organizations
(48.5 percent) than NGOs (21.2 percent) (Pratikno 2011:280).

shall conclude that the most prominent change brought by decentralization is the people's side winning such legitimacy. And we should also be aware of civil society's contributions to lead these changes by proposing the value of decentralization, democratization, and anti-corruption, even when they do not have much influence at the local politics level.

5.4 Summary

The drastic shift of governmental decentralization happened as a top-down measure to avoid possible regional revolts and independence after the end of the New Order rule led by Java-centric Suharto and his regime. As a result of the major shift of financial, human, and administrative resources from central to local governments, locally elected officials are at least in some regions starting to provide public services in better quality, and moreover the new systems of decentralization and local democracy seems to be already embedded as a value in people and society. However, the local level "alliance" comprises from local elites including politicians, military officers, and leaders in Suharto-era as well as newly established businesses and oligarchy, and "*premans,*" gangsters who benefit from administrative systems and local democracy. Without a check from the upper governmental / political institutions or civil society, they can enjoy the resources newly made available by decentralization. It seems that as far as the power balance works, the "alliance" can make an SI initiative quite stable – no matter whether it is virtuous or vicious in nature.

Chapter 6:   Conclusion

This chapter responds to the research questions set in the Introduction and presents findings from the case studies, including the two-axes model of SI scaling. Then it discusses what may be some contributions this study can make to the research of social innovation theory, and some possible policy implications. Finally it proposes future research topics based on the findings that this study managed to obtain.

6.1 Findings

First, this section responds to the main research question of: "What are the factors and causal mechanisms that affect the scaling of (or the failure of) social innovation initiatives in selected Asian countries?", summarized as eight findings. Then it shows a model to describe the SI scaling by two axes of top-down or bottom-up initiatives, and the degree to which multi-sectoral "alliances" proliferate.

The first finding is that in many cases, opportunities are born out of crises. In the case studies, we can see that many of the significant SI initiatives arise as a consequence of a major social crisis which may damage the unity or stability of the entire society. The Great Hanshin Earthquake opened an opportunity to create legislation for private nonprofit organizations. Environmental pollution in Japan was a serious health hazard to thousands of people. Increasing inequality in post-reform China and post-financial crisis South Korea both urged stakeholders including policymakers to take drastic measures. Indonesian decentralization was also a response to the confusion and increasing risk of regional revolt and disintegration following the Asian Financial Crisis and the political turmoil after the fall of the Suharto regime.

Even after the remarkable economic growth in East Asian countries, severe inequality, unemployment (or lack of decent work) and poverty remain in the society, together with aging populations and weakening traditional social safety nets. The governments, not only in Japan but also in China, South

Korea, and Indonesia, are all gradually shifting to more universal systems of social welfare and social

services, but they are hesitant to move to a full-service welfare state considering the financial sustainability

and capacity limitation. "Social innovation" – no matter what it means to the people who mention it - is

expected to be a solution in many such societies, especially when governments are failing to cope with the

situation caused by a crisis. As Westley et al. (2007) notes, the crisis may be a "release" of existing

resources and spaces from the public sector, which are then opened up as opportunities for different SI

initiatives (Figure 6.1).

Figure 6.1 Resilience and Adaptability Cycle
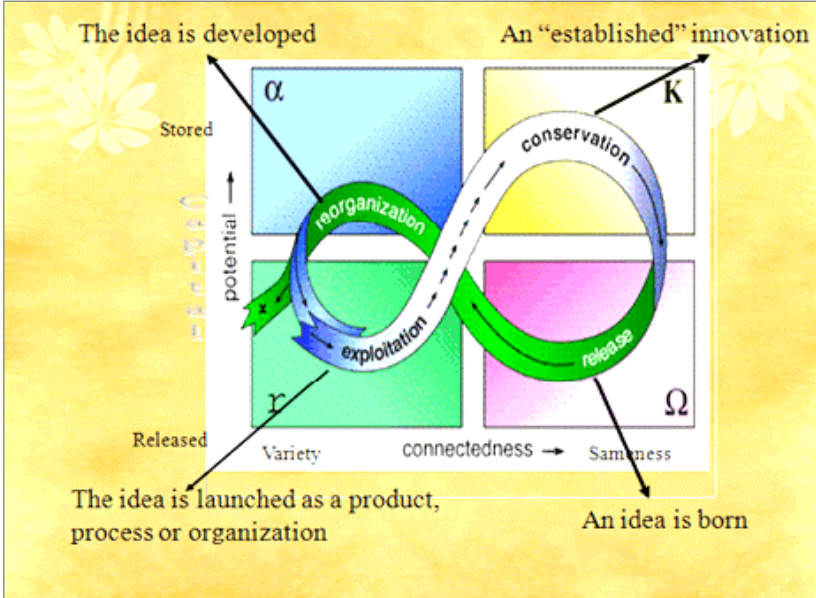
Source: Social Innovation Generation website[1]

Another finding is that while Asian states are powerful, they are not powerful enough to force all

others to follow their decisions. Most of the target countries once had (or still have) a history of

authoritarian rule and state-corporatism. This includes Party-State China, South Korea during military rule,

the Suharto regime in Indonesia, and is also somewhat true for postwar Japan, which continued to have a

---

[1] "Social Innovation" page, SiG website: http://www.sigeneration.ca/social-innovation/ (Retrieved 5th May 2018).

strong connection between the mainstream political-bureaucratic-industrial sectors. Such experiences have left behind significant traits in the state of civil societies and in the relationships between government, business, and civil society, such as mainstream governmental bodies and businesses' deep-rooted suspicion of civil society.

Still, we should not think of Asian governments as having unlimited power to do whatever they want. As we see in the case of community-based integrated care in Japan and the social enterprise scheme led by the South Korean Ministry of Employment and Labor, top-down policies without the engagement of different players tend to end up in failure, or an inactive scheme relying solely on governmental support. Successful cases of top-down initiatives have corresponding partners on local levels, like NPOs and local governments who needed the former's operational capacity in Japan, social organizations in China or local elites in Indonesia fully utilizing the spaces opened for them (though not necessarily in an ideal or expected way).

A third finding is that social enterprise is not the cure for all problems, at least for now. While disappointment in governments' ability to tackle social issues grows, society's expectations for SI are on the rise. In particular, there are high hopes for social entrepreneurs or social enterprises to both solve social issues and be financially self-sustainable. From the civil society side as well, there is the hope that transforming themselves into a form of social enterprise may make them more financially sustainable, and release them from the stigma placed on "civil society" in some countries (The Hope Institute 2017:271). However, we should be fully aware that no civil society or social enterprise / social entrepreneur is able to solve systemic social problems by themselves (Ganz et al. 2018). Even in our case studies of social economy organizations in South Korea, social organizations in China, and NPOs in Japan – although all of them are growing considerably and firmly established as a sector, their scale and presence within their respective societies is still limited, if not marginal. Their presence is also biased towards urban areas and certain social issues. In other words, we should not expect social entrepreneurs / social enterprises themselves to be the solution for all the diverse and enormous social issues, or to replace the full function

149

of the welfare state, at least at the moment or in any near future.

Fourth is the power of local-level multi-sectoral "alliances." In the case analyses, the existence of and proliferation of multi-sectoral "alliances," especially on the local level, was the key determining factor in the successful scaling and fixation of SI initiatives in the society. Local governments in "progressive" local governments' areas in Japan working together with local residents and businesses created solutions for environmental pollution prior to the nation. Local governments like Shanghai, Beijing or Guangdong became experimental sites for social organizations in China. And Mayor Park Won-soon's Seoul city, with its partnerships with social businesses and civil society organizations, is becoming the "social economy city" of East Asia. Indonesian decentralization found strong unions on the local level to support (or utilize) the resources released for them. On the contrary, when community-based integrated care in Japan failed to establish a multi-stakeholder collaboration in most local areas, it could not take a firm hold in the society. The establishment and proliferation of such local-level "alliances" can be a crucial step toward the SI initiatives becoming rooted in the society and bringing it up to a macro-level change.

But this does not happen automatically, and even in our limited number of case studies, we can observe that there are some different paths to formulate such local-level alliances. First, it can be resource-driven partnership to utilize the available resources, like in the case of Indonesian governmental decentralization. Second, it can be initiated by the leadership of local government, mostly by elected heads but in some cases by active bureaucrats to facilitate different stakeholders, such as the cases of the "progressive" local governments in Japan or Mayor Park in Seoul. Third, it can be created as a result of social movement or grass-roots activities, like what happened in the case of 1963/1964 anti-pollution movement in Shizuoka prefecture, Japan. Of course it can be a mixture of any of these, as typical in the case of social organizations in China which may be a mixture of all three, depending on the region and time.

Also, the formation of "alliances" is affected by other factors such as the seriousness of the issue

and the existence of a social consensus to tackle the issue, in other words the amount of pressure being

exerted upon the stakeholders. Such force from the society urges politicians to take actions and businesses

to follow new standards, as well as seeking out new business opportunities.[2] The resources allocated for

forming such "alliances" definitely helps – what may have happened, if community-based integrated care

in Japan had been given enough monetary incentives,[3] or if Indonesian local governments had not been

given enough resources after decentralization? Perhaps the results would be quite different.

A fifth point taken from this study is the danger of power capture. While we appreciate the value

of an "alliance" of stakeholders, especially at the local level, we must be fully aware of the reality that this

does not always create the expected, or "desirable" output and in some case, the "alliance" can be a

"vicious" one. As in the case of Indonesian decentralization, an alliance of powerful elites can monopolize

the benefits created by new political systems and exclude those who do not have power or access to

resources. Or as in the cases of NPOs in Japan, Social Enterprise Promotion Law in South Korea or social

organizations in China, governmental agencies can manipulate the system to suit their own agendas.

Having alternative options (such as cooperatives in South Korea, or Private-Run Non-Enterprise Units /

corporates in China) may help to avoid this kind of capture, though it is not always available. Having more

resources available, such as governmental funding, may also increase the risks of misuse and rent-seeking.

The sixth finding is that the SI processes are not straightforward. We should be aware that SI

processes do not always happen as a linear process starting from small initiatives and scaling to macro-

level as some SI theories or models suggest. In the case studies, environmental pollution in Japan was the

only initiative in which the scaling from grassroots to local, then to the central government level happened

as the conventional model suggests. Others may go back and forth like the cases of social organizations in

---

[2] We can recall how Japanese corporates developed pollution control / prevention as a new industrial area, or how South Korean *chaebols* participated in a newly established social enterprise sector, as well as finding them to be "clean" areas to operate in to avoid criticism from the general public.

[3] Although this is unlikely, since one of the main reasons to introduce community-based integrated care was to reduce the cost of elderly care, and the lion's share of the long-term care insurance funding was already being used for various service providers.

China and decentralization in Indonesia. Or some even start as a top-down central government policy, and after the failure of the initial attempt, grow again at different levels, as we see in the cases of community-based integrated care in Japan, social organizations in China, and social enterprise in South Korea. These processes are a result of negotiation and compromise, and reframing of acceptable concepts between the changing actors.

Seventh is the power of ideals and values. What makes a significant difference between everyday political negotiations and SI is the existence of a novel idea or value behind an SI. It is not only a nice phrase or slogan, but if the idea can convince people that it can work to resolve a major issue, it may serve to push the negotiation process forward. The newly invented values of "environmental protection" and "environment rights" became a force to stop businesses from continuing to openly pollute and to force them to cooperate with governmental regulations. In South Korea, the concept of "social economy" introduced from Europe and the U.S. led the bipartisan politics to an agreement to move the initiatives forward. In China, ambiguous words like "charity," "philanthropy," or "public benefit" and their various translations are used to support social organizations. Even in the Indonesian decentralization process, people now have the vocabulary and the logic for requesting government services that are closer to the people or to meet their needs.

And in the case studies we can find two different sources of such ideas: first is learning from other countries, as we saw in the cases of civil society leaders in Japan designing schemes for NPOs by studying the U.S. and the U.K. voluntary sectors, the concept of social economy being brought in from Europe in South Korea, the Charity Law and other initiatives to support social organizations in China, and the decentralization agenda introduced by international donors to Indonesia. Second is ideas that are derived from existing local problems and initiatives. Intellectuals including Dr. Tsuru in Japan who led the environmental pollution studies, Dr. Hwang in South Korea, or the group of scholars that developed the concepts of Chinese civil society were closely in touch with the reality of local communities (for instance, Dr. Tsuru visited all major pollution sites and Dr. Hwang worked together with civil society practitioners)

and indigenous values, and were able to derive important values and concepts from them. They then shape these elements into a positive value which is more easily accepted by other stakeholders and society. In other words, they can act as an interpreter between social reality and foreign concepts.

However, it is important to note that these ideas are also a result of negotiation and conflict between different stakeholders, and it can be easily changed or "hijacked" by someone with more manipulative power, or influence. In the case of South Korea, the Ministry of Employment and Labor took the idea of social enterprise from civil society leaders and researchers and utilized it for their own agenda. Even in the case of environmental pollution, the idea of "public harm (*Kogai*)" was shifted (or sanitized) to environmental value and rights as it became mainstreamed in society.

The eighth and final finding is the use of information technology to change information availability, resource mobilization, and governance mechanisms. As seen in some of the case studies (although the cases are limited) such as the utilization of big data for community-based integrated care in Japan or online platforms for social organizations in China, the development of ICT is changing the information sharing, governance mechanisms, resource allocation and power balance in societies. It may work either to strengthen the coercive power of the state, or to release more information and data to the public and allow more resource mobilization and participatory governance, as we see in the case of Chinese social organizations. Table 6.1 gives a summary of all eight findings and the case studies applicable.

Table 6.1 Summary of the Findings of Causal Relationships and Patterns Found from Case Studies

Findings	Case Study Country* (and Cases for Japan**)
Finding 1: Opportunities Created by Crises	JP (NPO, EP), SK, IN
Finding 2: Strong but Weak States	JP (CBIC), CH, SK, IN
Finding 3: Social Enterprise is NOT the Cure	JP (NPO), CH, SK
Finding 4: The Power of Local-level "Alliances"	JP (NPO, EP, CBIC), CH, SK, IN

Finding 5:	The Danger of Power Capture	JP (NPO), CH, SK, IN
Finding 6:	Processes Going Back and Forth	JP (NPO, CBIC), CH, SK, IN
Finding 7:	The Power of Ideals and Values	JP (NPO, EP), CH, SK, IN
Finding 8:	Information and Governance	JP (CBIC), CH

* JP: Japan, CH: China (Social Organization), SK: South Korea (Social Economy), IN: Indonesia (Decentralization)

** NPO: Non-Profit Organization, EP: Environmental Pollution, CBIC: Community-Based Integrated Care

Source: Developed by the author

Next is the four types of social innovation scaling, based on the two axes we set in Figure 1.12 to analyze different case studies and scaling patterns: i) different flows of initiatives – top-down or bottom-up, and ii) whether the case had the establishment and proliferation of local "alliances" to support the initiative or not. Figure 6.2 divides the SI initiatives into four types according to these two categories, the flow of the initiatives and the scale of local-level support:

Figure 6.2 Four Types of Social Innovation Scaling

	Proliferation of local-level alliances	**Lacked local-level alliances**
Top-down	**i. Caught on Locally** Wide range of local-level alliances to support and sustain the policy / initiative coming from central government (e.g. NPO sector in Japan / Decentralization in Indonesia)	**iii. Hollow Policy** Lack of local-level alliances to support the central policy / initiative (e.g. Gov-led Social Enterprise scheme in South Korea / Community-based integrated care in Japan)
Bottom-up	**ii. Successful Scaling** Diffusion of local level-alliances allows the momentum to scale up and make a change on the macro level (e.g. Environmental pollution in Japan / Social Organizations in China (partly))	**iv. Failed to Scale** An SI initiative that does not find stakeholders to support or expand it (e.g. none from the case studies - but numerous SI initiatives fail to scale and stay small)[4]

Source: Developed by the author

Type i. is "Caught on Locally." This is a pattern for top-down policies which find a number of local-level alliances to support or sustain the policy. When there is a wide range of such alliances, SI initiatives can continue and become embedded in society. It is like a ball caught by and then passed between people waiting at the local level, so we shall name this the "caught on locally" pattern. Examples of this pattern include the NPO sector in Japan, or governmental decentralization in Indonesia.

Type ii. is "Successful scaling." This pattern starts from the grassroots or a local community, then after proliferation or dissemination to other areas, with local level "alliances" formed in each area, reaches societal change on a macro level, including central governmental policies. This may be the most typical

---

[4] Deiglmeier (2018); Howaldt et al. (2014a)

way of scaling, though it rarely happens. Examples of this pattern are environmental pollution in Japan, social economy organizations in South Korea, or social organizations in China, though the last two are a mixture with top-down policies.

Type iii. is "Hollow Policy." This is a pattern which is seen when a top-down initiative could not find any (or not so many) local-level "alliances" to support the initiative. Therefore, the policy cannot be sustained or take root in society, but disappears after the funding disappears or the leadership changes. Therefore, we should call this a "Hollow Policy" pattern, and the examples of this process (at least at the moment) are community-based integrated care in Japan, or the Social Enterprise scheme in South Korea created by the Ministry of Employment and Labor.

Type iv. is "Failed to Scale." Although this pattern is not found in the case studies, this is actually how most SI initiatives or projects end up – started on a local level (often by a single organization) and unable to find a sufficient number of local partners, or "alliances" to adopt the initiative, or to create a certain macro-level impact. Indeed, this is the reason why the scaling of SI initiatives remains a major issue to be resolved.

By looking at these four patterns, we can see that the proliferation of local level "alliances" is the crucial key for the SI initiative to scale, or to have a significant impact on a society, no matter if it is a top-down or a bottom-up process. Thus if we want an SI initiative to have a significant impact on society, building a number of local level, inter-sectoral "alliances" may be a shortcut, or perhaps another way might be preparing a policy incentive to create these types of stakeholder networks.

6.2 Arguments

This section discusses what the two-axes model and other findings as well as the methodology of this study may contribute to the study of SI theory and policy. The model sees the primary significance of the establishment and proliferation of local-level "alliances" formed by different sectors, as it functions as the driver to create macro-level social changes by an SI initiative and for them to take root. The role of such

multi-sectoral "alliances" were previously overlooked as a consequence of a few established academic

patterns and methodologies taken in SI study. First, there was a dichotomy in SI research of focusing either

on i) micro-level analysis of a "social innovator" or single project/organization, or on ii) macro-level

concepts or models. Second, since there was a strong tendency to see SI from the perspectives of individual

organizations or social movements, multi-sectoral governance or negotiation processes were mostly

ignored (partly because of the unavailability of data and framework to analyze such processes), and scaling

was considered to be the linear expansion of a homogeneous movement or an initiative without substantive

change to its original principle or characteristics.

This thesis is not the first one to focus on the interaction of multi-sectoral actors (Pel and Bauler

2014; Westley et al. 2017). What is new about this study is first the application of the methodology of

historical process-tracing of the interactions between various stakeholders, instead of analyzing one

organization or movement. Also different from the historical process-tracing conducted by Westley and her

group, it uses a tri-sectoral relationship framework as a unit of analysis instead of individuals and

organizations. Second, by applying that methodology and multi-faceted perspective, this study enables us

to see how an SI initiative proliferates and takes root (or does not) in the society as a result of inter-sectoral

collaboration, negotiation, and conflict, as well as how the ideas and concepts - not only practices – of the

SI initiative can be modified or diverted, based on the interaction of actors.

To explain further about the latter point, Figure 6.3 presents another model which looks a little bit

like a game of billiards. An SI initiative may start at the individual (i) level by a civil society organization

(Ic), drawn as a double-line arrow. When it comes into a local ecosystem level (ii), there may be other

actors such as local government (Lg), businesses (Lb), or other local civil society organizations or local

communities (Lc)[5] that affect the initiative (single-line arrow from each showing their influence), and the

arrow may change direction slightly or drastically as a result. Meanwhile, the initiative is "diffused" to

---

[5] There may be more than one of any or all stakeholders (Lg, Lb, Lc / Ng, Nb, Nc), but the figure is simplified.

another local ecosystem, with another set of local stakeholders, so the direction of the arrow may or may

not be same as the original one. When they scale to the national or macro level (iii), there is more

involvement from national stakeholders (Ng, Nb, Nc) and as a result, more alteration of the initiative may

happen.[6]

Figure 6.3 Model of Inter-Sectoral Relations in a Social Innovation Initiative
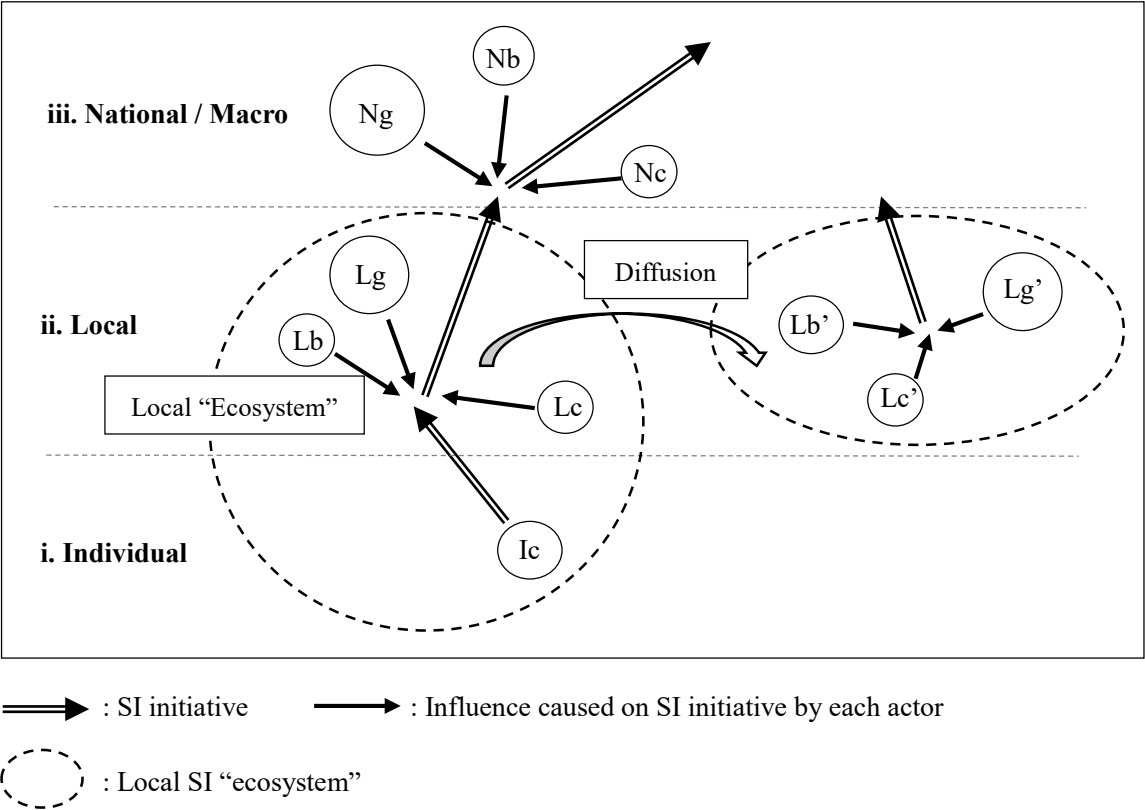
Source: Developed by the author

These models and the methodology can provide strong empirical evidence to establish a

theoretical linkage between the micro and macro levels of SI processes and may contribute to the field as a

long-wished for "middle-range" theory. Applying these models together with SI ecosystem study opens a

---

[6] And perhaps at this national / macro stage, the initial organization (Ic) may not have significant influence over
the whole initiative, or there may be many more who are involved. This is one of the reasons why one-
organizational analysis is limited in its ability to analyze the whole scaling process of an SI initiative.

new field for SI research to analyze i) a dynamic process of how an "alliance" is formed in a local or national ecosystem, and what the possibly different interests and aims that stakeholders have in it are, and ii) how the "alliance" is expanded or scaled to other areas or countries, and how they are changed from the "original", based on other local contexts and actors. From such analyses, there will be more nuanced empirical evidence to solve the mystery of SI scaling, and SI theoretical models can be further refined.

The model also provides a suggestion as to why the policies to support SI development that focus primarily on incubation of social entrepreneurs or supporting individual projects, or on reforming laws and/or tax incentives have mostly failed to scale or to have a significant social impact. For an SI initiative to have a certain degree of impact, or even possibly to replace the welfare state model and establish a welfare society, there is a need to harness multi-sectoral collaboration in local communities rather than supporting one single sector. This needs to go beyond empty slogans or directions asking for "collaboration," or providing a negligible amount of subsidy from the government alone. What is needed is the creation of a framework for local governance between different stakeholders that allows them to take substantial actions, and this needs to be done by contribution from all sectors, including civil society organizations and local communities.

Then what are the roles of central and local governments, businesses, and civil society / social sectors (including the nonprofit/charity, voluntary, and social business sectors) in creating such collaborations? Here are some of the roles each sector plays in the processes, based on the findings from the case studies.

First is the government. What only governments can do is to create space for innovative actors, and to recognize the legitimacy of such attempts (Clarence 2014:55). Without such acknowledgement, it will be difficult for innovative actors to raise resources and win society's trust. The significant contribution of the NPO Law in Japan or the Charity Law in China was to give such recognition and legitimacy to nonprofit / social organizations, albeit selectively. The Social Enterprise Promotion Act and Basic Law on Cooperatives in South Korea, among other schemes also provided space for different actors.

159

Providing funding and other resources is often considered the most important role of the government. It may be a useful tool for short-term achievement, but scholars tend to agree that it also brings about some side effects, such as creating dependency and impairing the creativity of social actors as we saw in the case of certified social enterprises in South Korea (Defourny and Nyssens 2008; Hwang et al. 2016), and to some extent in NPOs in Japan. Indonesian decentralization is another example of local elites enjoying rent-seeking of newly provided resources to local governments and councils.

Probably another role – which is often overlooked – is the coordination of various stakeholders for effective and fruitful cooperation, which in some cases leads to forming successful "alliances" as well as setting some standards for good governance and quality operation, which may or may not happen without such intervention. Again, the Seoul Metropolitan Government focused on this to create supportive partnerships for social economy development. And in the 1960s, local governments in Japan played a significant role in coordinating businesses and other sectors to reduce pollution in their areas ahead of the central government.

Second is businesses. By definition, the goal of business is to maximize profit and not to maximize public benefit or to solve social issues. Therefore, it is not particularly helpful to expect businesses to be "drivers" of SI. However, businesses have the best capacity to scale up any new initiatives once they are given the right incentive, as in the case of corporate sectors joining the environmental protection movement once society became hostile to polluting businesses and there was a new opportunity for pro-environmental business. In some ways, they are the ones who have the "casting vote" in the SI process. In a society with limited resources (as most of our societies are), a change in social values which results in the consumers' choices and pressure posed from them may be the best incentives for businesses to adapt their operations accordingly, rather than generous subsidies from the government.

Thirdly, the civil society sector including academics and independent intellectuals is most suitable to find and develop new values and ideas, either from their own experiences or by referring to what others are doing. The value comes from the real circumstances of the society they work with, as the

160

practitioners in South Korea accumulated experience in diverse forms of cooperatives and other alternative businesses with disadvantaged groups or how social organizations in China developed new fields of social services (conversely, civil society in Indonesia is blamed for focusing too much on central politics and foreign donors rather than the needs of society at the grassroots level). It can also come from foreign practices or concepts. Also, they have more freedom for innovation than governments, for example being free from the boundaries that restrict governments (for example, legal justification or geographical jurisdiction). Therefore, if they have the capacity to collaborate with others (which is not always the case) and to find resources, they are in the best position to start new initiatives on the ground together with other stakeholders. Finally, they can create an atmosphere or a pressure to change the attitude of other sectors, like the pressure from civil society and mass demonstrations changing social welfare policies in China, South Korea, and Indonesia, or the environmental policies and nonprofit laws and regulations of local and central governments in Japan.

Now is there any major difference or heterogeneousness in the pattern and processes of SI scaling between the existing SI literature which is largely based on the experience of Western countries, and this study based on an analysis of Northeast and Southeast Asian countries? The findings in this study show a strong commonality between the findings of Western SI literature, especially of Westley et al. (2017), which puts emphasis on i) the importance of meaning and initial vision, ii) development from a niche, iii) negotiation and compromise between stakeholders, sometimes over a long time-span, and iv) the failure of regime-led innovations, or Haxeltine et al. (2017) which sees the process of SI as a replacement of existing institutions by creating new social relations. The structure of the multi-stakeholder processes of SI scaling seems to have no essential difference between Asian and Western societies.

Although the state influence on civil society seems to be strong in most of our case studies in Asian countries, they are not almighty. Also the government-led approach towards SI is becoming increasingly normal in Western contexts as well, as Defourny and Nyssens (2008) point out that social enterprise in Europe is also dependent on governmental support. Haxeltine et al. (2015:35-36) also state

that SI initiatives are implemented by state policies, and people are motivated either by incentives or enforcement to do it as an "imposed change pathway" of SI, showing examples of young people obliged to do community work, or the "Big Society" policy taken under the U.K. Conservative-Liberal Democratic coalition government. Westley et al. (2017) presents some cases of an SI initiative (such as intelligence testing) utilizing the interests of the state during wartime that was quickly adopted and spread throughout society. Martinelli (2013) stresses contextual differences and the use of bottom-up approach for space, funding, and the ownership of locality, which seems to correspond to the findings of this study.

Still, we should not overlook the power of values and meanings in different political, social, and cultural contexts. These differences may affect the goals and processes of SI initiatives - as we saw how the word "civil society" may have very different meanings in Communist China or Muslim Indonesia. Differences in values may also affect the relationships between actors (Pel et al. 2017:13).

Furthermore, we notice from the case studies (NPOs in Japan, social organizations and "civil society" concepts in China, social economic organizations in South Korea, and decentralization in Indonesia), that even the principles behind an SI initiative may not stay coherent, as Westley (2017:242-243) suggested, but may be amended, distorted, or hijacked depending on local contexts and the interactions and power relations between different actors.[7] For instance, NPOs in Japan became largely a tool for governmental service outsourcing, rather than a vibrant sector for grassroots mobilization or civil society partitipation. The concept of social economy was altered by the South Korean Ministry of Employment and Labor to increase employment opportunities for marginalized groups by giving subsidies, while the Chinese translation of "civil society" has changed (and is still changing) quickly to obtain the approval of the Party-government system, and the ideal of decentralization in Indonesia to bring services closer to people has been manipulated by local elites (though they may be still using the same language).

---

[7] Westley also acknowledges the effect of complex dynamics and "we do not expect consistency… across time" especially for practice, still seeing a "surprising degree of coherence… which in this case seemed to be guided by the thread of the original idea or principles that undergirded it" (Westley 2017:242), so it may be whether you argue that the cup is half empty, or half full.

Nevertheless, we should not see this as a divide between the East and the West, but something which urges us to be more conscious of such contexts in any given setting or local "ecosystem," including what values each region and actor may give priority to, compared to others. Even in one country, any particular community or region may have very a different local context from the so-called "national" images, depending on the history, social settings, and actors it has.

6.3 Policy Implications and Way Forward

Finally, based on the results of analyses, this study attempts to provide some policy implications, both to generate and also to scale up SI initiatives. Based on the findings above, here are some of the infrastructures and policy recommendations that may be useful to establish and scale up successful SI processes.

First is to create inclusive spaces and resources at local levels, for the local stakeholders to form an "alliance" to resolve their own issues. From some of the successful SI cases we have observed, such as some local governments in Japan during the 1960s-1970s stopping environmental pollution, or the Seoul Metropolitan Government under Mayor Park creating an environment to enhance social economy and social services, we can see that local community stakeholders are in a better position than policy makers in the central government to identify diverse local issues and priorities, and to form local-level alliances to tackle those issues together with other stakeholders. Therefore, creating more spaces, authority, and resources for stakeholders in local communities can help to utilize a limited amount of resources more effectively by forming an "alliance" of local stakeholders. However, to avoid any elite capture in which specific groups exclusively access and manipulate power and resources, rules and governance mechanisms should be put in place to form inclusive partnerships between different stakeholders in the community.

Second is to secure a minimum level of social safety nets and safeguarding from harmful results. One of the findings throughout this study is that none of the cases, including NPOs or community-based integrated care in Japan, social organizations in China, social economy organizations in South Korea, and

163

decentralization in Indonesia, are able, at least not at the moment, to provide all or most of the services that are needed in an entire society by themselves. Even for the best practices, they are either i) dependent on capable / charismatic leaders, or ii) unable to collaborate with other sectors (governments and businesses), or iii) limited in their coverage areas, geographically or issue-wise.

And perhaps we cannot realistically expect that local communities will be able to deal with all issues, especially for minorities and marginalized groups. With the limited amount of resources and power dynamics in a community, the services provided may miss a number of critical issues for those groups. Therefore, while having more resources, decision-making power, and time in the locality may improve the situation, it is also necessary for the national government to set a minimum level of social safety nets and service standards, which can be universally applied for all citizens regardless of their position in society. Furthermore, governments and civil society together need to monitor the results, to avoid any "innovation" that causes unexpected damage to others and to ensure quality control for any possible violation.

Third is to create "playgrounds" or "regulatory sandboxes" for SI experiments. Despite civil society organizations including social enterprise perhaps not being able to "solve" any social issue by themselves without working with other sectors, it is also true that they are in the best position to develop and try new ideas to tackle any issues within local communities. And while new technologies enable different options which did not exist before, they are often in conflict with existing rules and regulations. Thus, such trials for innovative practices can be encouraged by easing regulatory frameworks during the "experimental" stage. Nevertheless, it needs to be monitored and recorded closely first so that it will not cause critical harm to anyone, and second to extract useful knowledge for scaling and disseminating to others.

Fourth is to build an infrastructure to share success and failure of different initiatives. Both to maximize the impact and avoid any possible damage, the openness of information and data should be pursued for all attempts and policies. The use of the latest information technology can definitely aid these efforts. This is not only to present the results, but also to create an opportunity for people to be engaged and

provide their input. Also, the exchange of people and information between different areas needs to be expanded, so that people can learn from others' successes and failures. This is not only for people in the same countries. Our case studies show how social innovators are inspired by the best practices of other countries, and it will be helpful to provide such experiences for more of them.

Fifth is to support scaling up successful initiatives, in a sustainable way. When a useful SI initiative is consolidated in one place, and if it is not too context-specific or dependent on external funding, it may be scaled up. But for the initiative to be sustainable, it is preferable if the scaling does not depend on policy funding, coercive regulations, or a "special" leader, but is disseminated instead through knowledge sharing, or as a sustainable business activity, in so far as it is relevant.

Now as the final thought of this research, I shall note some points what I find to be its limitations and the possible way forward. This thesis focused mostly on inter-sectoral relationships, or how those relationships influence the scaling processes of a SI initiative. It managed to present the crucial role of local-level "alliances" between different stakeholders for SI initiatives to scale, and how the initiative may be altered as the result of interactions between various players. Still from its focus, scope and cases selected, it has certain limitations and left unanswered questions. One of the major ones is how different ideas and values affect the power dynamics. Does the new idea always precede the initiative, or is it that the new idea can be embedded within society (and replace the old ideas and values) only after the practice becomes a new "normal" in the society? Both seem to be true in our case studies, but this is something we could not cover enough in this study. Another limitation is the lack of in-depth study of SI processes in a specific local "ecosystem," which naturally happened due to this research's scope in which the whole process of scaling in one country was covered. Sector-based (such as health care, education, among others) cases are another thing discarded from this study that can benefit from the findings of this research.

Based on the findings and unanswered questions, there are some new research questions, including i) how ideas and values embedded in societies affect the SI processes, including the formation and fixation of new ideas and values, ii) how a succesful "alliance" can be formed in a local ecosystem, and

how the sense of crisis / urgency or a new resource provided for an initiative affect it, and iii) how

technology can help to form successful SI and its diffusion and scaling, among others.

Some of the next possible steps to take are first to conduct more detailed case studies and

comparisons of SI formulation and scaling processes within specific "SI ecosystem" contexts to see how

different social values, traditions, available resources, stakeholders, and societal relationships within an

ecosystem affect the development of SI initiatives, formation of "alliances," and creation of a "welfare

community" at local levels. A second step would be to investigate how different technologies (big data,

artificial intelligence, and mobile devices, remote cares, among others) can help (or not help) create more

inclusive and effective SI processes, and a third to exchange empirical findings and theoretical models

among other scholars working globally on SI theories and empirical studies.

References

In English

Antadze, N. (2017). National Parks in the United States. In Westley, F., McGowan, K., and Tjornbo, O. (eds.) *The Evolution of Social Innovation: Building resilience through transitions*. Cheltenham and Northampton, MA: Edwar Elgar Publishing, 18-39.

Antlov, H., Wetterberg, A. and Dharmawan, L. (2016). Village Governance, Community Life, and the 2014 Village Law in Indonesia. *Bulletin of Indonesian Economic Studies*, 52(2), 161-183.

Aoo, K. (2017). Aging Society in Japan: A process of social innovation and the roles of civil society. *Korean NPO Review*. 16(2), 67-85.

Aoo, K. (2018b, forthcoming). *Social Innovation Eco-system Study in East Asia: Japan*. A deliverable of "Research on the Social Innovation Eco-System in Asia" project funded by the Toyota Foundation.

Asian Venture Philanthropy Network (2017). *Social Investment Country Report: South Korea*. Singapore: AVPN.

Azra, A. (2006). *Indonesia, Islam, and Democracy: Dynamics in a global context*. Singapore: Equinox Publishing.

Barnes, M. (2010). Stepping up to Support the Social Innovation Fund and Other Community Solutions. *The White House (President Barack Obama) website*: https://obamawhitehouse.archives.gov/blog/2010/05/27/stepping-support-social-innovation-fund-and-other-community-solutions (Retrieved 12th Sep. 2017)

Beard, V. A. and Phakphian, S. (2012). Community-based Planning in Thailand: Social capital, collective action and elite capture. In Daniere, A. and Luong, H. V. (eds.) *The Dynamics of Social Capital and Civil Engagement in Asia*. London: Routledge, 141-159.

Beittinger-Lee, V. (2009). *(Un) Civil Society and Political Change in Indonesia: A contested arena*.

Abingdon: Routledge.

Bennett, A. (2010). Process Tracing and Causal Inference. In Brady, H. E. and Collier, D. (eds.). *Rethinking Social Inquiry: Diverse tools, shared standards.* (2nd edition). Lanham: Rowman & Littlefield, 207-219.

BEPA (Bureau of European Policy Advisers, European Commission) (2011). *Empowering People, Driving Change: Social innovation in the European Union*. Luxemburg: European Union.

Bidet, E. and Eum, H. (2011). Social Enterprise in South Korea: History and diversity. *Social Enterprise Journal,* 7(1), 69-85.

Borzaga, C. and Defourny, J. (eds.) (2001). *The Emergence of Social Enterprise*. London and New York: Routledge.

Bradach, J. and Grindle, A. (2014). Emerging Pathways to Transformative Scale. *Stanford Social Innovation Review,* Spring 2014 (Special Supplement), 7-11.

Brady, H., Collier, D., and Seawright, J. (2010). Refocusing the Discussion of Methodology. In Brady, H. E. and Collier, D. (eds.). *Rethinking Social Inquiry: Diverse tools, shared standards*. 2nd edition, Lanham: Rowman & Littlefield, 15-31.

Brennan, M. (2017). Why is WeChat Pushing So Hard for Charity? *China Channel online* (30th Aug. 2017). https://chinachannel.co/wechat-pushing-hard-charity/ (Retrieved 4th May 2018)

Buehler, M. (2010). Decentralisation and Local Democracy in Indonesia: The marginalization of the public sphere. In Aspinall, E. and Mietzner, M. (eds.). *Problems of Democratisation in Indonesia: Elections, institutions and society*. Singapore: ISEAS.

Bunte, M. and Ufen, A. (2009). The New Order and Its Legacy: Reflections on democratization in Indonesia. In Bunte, M. and Ufen, A. (eds.). *Democratization in Post-Suharto Indonesia*. Abingdon: Routledge, 3-29.

Byrne, D. and Callaghan, G. (2014). *Complexity Theory and the Social Sciences: The state of the art*. Abingdon and New York: Routledge.

C. (2018, forthcoming). *Social Innovation Eco-system Study in East Asia: South Korea.* A deliverable of

"Research on the Social Innovation Eco-System in Asia" project funded by the Toyota Foundation.

Cajaiba-Santana, G. (2014). Social Innovation: Moving the field forward. A conceptual framework.

Technological Forecasting & Social Change, 82 (2014), 42-51.

Campbell, J. (2000). Changing Meanings of Frail Old People and the Japanese Welfare State. In Long, S. O.

(ed.). *Caring for the Elderly in Japan and the U.S.: Practices and policies*. London: Routledge, 82-97.

Campbell, J. Ikegami, N., Gori, C., Barbella F., Chomik R., d'Amico, F., Holder, H., Ishibashi T., Johansson,

L., Komisar, H., Ring, M., and Theobald, H. (2016). How Different Countries Allocate Long-Term Care

Resources to Older Users: A comparative snapshot. In Gori, C., Fernandez, J.-L., and Wittenberg, R.

(eds.). *Long-Term Care Reforms in OECD Countries*. Bristol: Policy Press, 47-76.

Charlton, S. E. M. (2010). *Comparing Asian Politics: India, China, and Japan*. (Third edition) Boulder:

Westview Press.

Chiappero-Martinetti, E. and Jacobi, N. V. (2015). *How can Sen's "Capabilities Approach" Contribute to

Understanding the Role for Social Innovations for the Marginalized?* CRESSI Working Papers,

Oxford: Said Business School.

China Association of Fundraising Professionals (2015). *Online Fundraising in China: A research report on

third party platforms in 2014*. Beijing: CAFP.

Christensen, C. M. (1997). *The Innovator's Dilemma: When new technologies cause great firms to fail*.

Boston, Mass.: Harvard Business School Press.

Chu, Y.-H., Diamond, L., Nathan, A. J., and Shin, D. C. (2008). Introduction: Comparative perspectives on

democratic legitimacy in East Asia. In Chu, Y.-H., Diamond, L., Nathan, A. J., Shin, D. C. (eds.)

How East Asians View Democracy. New York: Colombia University Press, 1-38.

Clarence, E. (2014). Good Governance for Scaling Social Innovations. In Sgaragli, F. (ed.) *Enabling Social

Innovation Ecosystems for Community-Led Territorial Development*. Rome: Fondazione Giacomo

Brodolini, 47-59.

Collier, D., Brady, H., and Seawright, J. (2010). Causal Inference: Old dilemmas, new tools. In Brady, H. E. and Collier, D. (eds.). *Rethinking Social Inquiry: Diverse tools, shared standards*. 2nd edition, Lanham: Rowman & Littlefield, 201-204.

Colombo, F., Llena-Nozal, A., Mercier, J., and Tjadens, F. (2011). *Help Wanted?: Providing and paying for long-term care*. OECD Publishing.

Dees, K. G. (1998). Enterprising Nonprofits. *Harvard Business Review*, 76(1), 55-68.

Deiglemeier, K. (2018). Scaling Social Innovations: Gaps and opportunities. In SI-DRIVE (ed.) *Atlas of Social Innovation: New practices for a better future*. Dusseldorf: SI-DRIVE, 198-201.

Defourny, J. and Develtere, P. (1999). The Social Economy: The worldwide making of a third sector. In Defourny, J., Develtere, P., and Fonteneau, B. (eds.). *Social Economy: North and South*. Centre d'Economie Sociale, 3-35.

Defourny, J. and Kim, S. (2011). Emerging Models of Social Enterprise in Eastern Asia: A cross-country analysis. *Social Enterprise Journal*, 7(1), 86-111.

Defourny, J. and Nyssens, M. (eds.) (2008). Social Enterprise in Europe: Recent trends and developments. *Working Paper Series*, No. 08/01, Liege: EMES European Research Network.

Defourny, J. and Nyssens, M. (2013). Social Innovation, Social Economy and Social Enterprise: What can the European debate tell us? In Moulaert, F. MacCallum, D., Mehmood, A. and Hamdouch, A. (eds.). *The International Handbook on Social Innovation: Collective action, social learning and transdisciplinary research.* Cheltenham and Northampton: Edward Elgar Publishing, 13-24.

Deng, Z. (ed.) (2011). *State and Civil Society: The Chinese perspective*. Singapore: World Scientific Publishing.

Diplomat, The. (2017). The Fall of Ahok and Indonesia's Future. April 21, 2017. https://thediplomat.com/2017/04/the-fall-of-ahok-and-indonesias-future/ (Retrieved 27th Mar. 2018)

Dixon, J. (1981). *The Chinese Welfare System 1949-1979*. New York: Praeger.

Domanski, D. (2018). Developing the Social Innovation Ecosystem of the Vienna Region. *ZSI Discussion*

Paper, Nr. 37. Wien: Zentrum for Soziale Innovation.

Domanski, D. and Kaletka, C. (eds.) (2017). *Exploring the Research Landscape of Social Innovation*. A

deliverable of the project Social Innovation Community (SIC), Dortmund: Sozialforschungstelle.

Drucker, P. F. (1986). *Innovation and Entrepreneurship: Practice and principles*. New York: Harper &

Row.

Economist, The. (2010). Let's Hear Those Ideas. 12th August 2010.

http://www.economist.com/node/16789766 (Retrieved 28th Aug. 2017)

Esping-Andersen, G. (1990). *The Three Worlds of Welfare Capitalism*. Cambridge: Polity Press.

Esping-Andersen, G. (1996). After the Golden Age? Welfare State Dilemmas in a Global Economy. In

Esping-Andersen, G. (ed.). *Welfare States in Transition: National adaptations in global economics*.

London: SAGE Publications, 1-31.

Esping-Andersen, G. (1999). *Social Foundations of Postindustrial Economics*. Oxford and New York:

Oxford University Press.

Estevez-Abe, A. (2003). State-Society Partnerships in the Japanese Welfare State. In Schwartz, F. J. and

Pharr, S. (eds.) *The State of Civil Society in Japan*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 154-172.

Estevez-Abe, M. (2008). *Welfare and Capitalism in Postwar Japan*. New York: Harvard University Press.

European Commission (2010). *Europe 2020: A strategy for smart, sustainable and inclusive growth*.

Brussels: European Commission.

European Commission (2013). *Guide to Social Innovation*. Luxemburg: European Union.

European Commission (2017). *Projects Funded by the European Union Programme for Employment and

Social Innovation (EaSI) Report VI*. Brussels: European Commission Directorate-General for

Employment, Social Affairs and Inclusion.

Evers, A. (1995). Part of the Welfare Mix: The third sector as an intermediate area between market

economy, state and community. *Voluntas*, 6(2), 159-182.

Ford, M. and Pepinsky, T. B. (eds.) (2014). *Beyond Oligarchy: Wealth, power and contemporary*

Indonesian politics. Ithaca: Cornell University Press.

Franz, H.-W., Hochgerner, J., and Howaldt, J. (2012). Challenge Social Innovation: An introduction. In Franz, H.-W., Hochgerner, J., and Howaldt, J. (eds.) *Challenge Social Innovation: Potentials for business, social entrepreneurship, welfare and civil society*. Heidelberg: Springer.

Gabriel, M. (2014). *Making It Big: Strategies for scaling social innovations*. London: Nesta.

Ganz, M., Kay, T., and Spicer, J. (2018). Social Enterprise is not Social Change. *Stanford Social Innovation Review*, Spring 2018 https://ssir.org/articles/entry/social_enterprise_is_not_social_change (Retrieved 8th Apr. 2018).

George, A. L. and Bennett, A. (2005). *Case Studies and Theory Development in the Social Sciences*. Cambridge, Mass.: The MIT Press.

Giddens, A. (1998). *The Third Way*. Cambridge: Polity Press.

Giddens, A. (2010). The Rise and Fall of New Labour. *New Statesman*, 17th May 2010 http://www.newstatesman.com/uk-politics/2010/05/labour-policy-policies-blair (last accessed 28th Aug. 2017),

Global Social Economy Forum (2016). *Status of Social Economy Development in Seoul: A case study of Seoul*. Seoul: GSEF.

Goldsmith, S., Georges, G., and Burke, T. G. (2010). *The Power of Social Innovation*. San Francisco: Jossey-Bass.

Goodman, R. and Peng, I. (1996). The East Asian Welfare States: Peripatetic learning, adaptive change, and nation-building. In Esping-Andersen, G. (ed.) *Welfare States in Transition: National adaptations in global economics*. London: SAGE Publications, 192-224.

Guida, F. and Maiolini, R. Introduction: Social innovation, actors, contexts and trends. Opening the black box. In Sgaragli, F. (ed.) *Enabling Social Innovation Ecosystems for Community-Led Territorial Development*. Rome: Fondazione Giacomo Brodolini, 13-19.

Guo, C. and Lai, W. (2017). Community Foundations in China: In search of identity? *Voluntas* (2017), 1-

17.

Hadiwanata, B. S. (2003). *The Politics of NGOs in Indonesia: Developing democracy and managing a movement*. London: Routledge.

Hadiz, V. (2010). *Localising Power in Post Authoritarian Indonesia: A Southeast Asia perspective*. Stanford: Stanford University Press.

Haggard, S. and Kaufman, R. R. (2008). *Development, Democracy and Welfare States: Latin America, East Asia, and Eastern Europe*. Princeton and Oxford: Princeton University Press.

Hamalainen, T. and Heiskala, R. (eds.) (2007). *Social Innovations, Institutional Change and Economic Performance: Making sense of structural adjustment processes in industrial sectors, regions, and societies*. Cheltenham: Edward Elgar.

Happiness Foundation, The (2018). *2017 Annual Report*. Seoul: The Happiness Foundation.

Hasegawa, T. (2014). *Local Government Responsiveness in Indonesia after Decentralization: Examining elite initiatives and citizen participation*. A PhD Dissertation submitted to the University of Tsukuba. (Abstract only)

https://tsukuba.repo.nii.ac.jp/?action=pages_view_main&active_action=repository_view_main_item_detail&item_id=32357&item_no=1&page_id=13&block_id=83

Haxeltine A., Kemp, R., Dumitru, A., Avelino, F., Pel, B., and Wittmayer, J. (2015). *TRANSIT WP3 Deliverable D3.2 – "A first prototype of TSI theory"*. TRANSIT.

Haxeltine, A., Kemp, R., Cozan, S., Ruijsink, S., Backhaus, J., Avelino, F. and Dumitru, A. (2017). *How Social Innovation Leads to Transformative Change: Towards a theory of transformative social innovation*. TRANSIT Brief No.3, TRANSIT.

Heals, C. and Green, H. (2016). *Social Innovation in Health and Social Care: Case study results*. A deliverable of the project: Social Innovation: Driving Force of Social Change (SI-DRIVE). Dortmund: Sozialforschungsstelle.

Heiskala, R. (2007). Social Innovations: Structural and power perspectives. In Hamalainen, T. and

Heiskala, R. (eds.). *Social Innovations, Institutional Change and Economic Performance: Making sense of structural adjustment processes in industrial sectors, regions, and societies.* Cheltenham: Edward Elgar, 52-79.

Holtzappel, C. J. G. (2009). Introduction: The regional governance reform in Indonesia. In Holtzappel, C. and Ramstedt, M. (eds.) *Decentralization and Regional Autonomy in Indonesia: Implementation and challenges*. Singapore: ISEAS, 1-56.

Hope Institute, The (2017). Social Innovation in Asia: Trends and characteristics in China, Korea, India, Japan and Thailand. In Morris-Suzuki, T. and Soh, E. J. (eds.) *New Worlds from Below: Informal life politics and grassroots action in Twenty-first-century Northeast Asia.* Acton: ANU Press. 249-274.

Howaldt, J., Butzin, A., Domanski, D., and Kaletka, C. (2014a). *Theoretical Approaches to Social Innovation – A critical literature review*. A deliverable of the project: Social Innovation: Driving Force of Social Change (SI-DRIVE). Dortmund: Sozialforschungsstelle.

Howaldt, J., Scroder, A., Kaletla, C., Refheld, D., and Terstriep, J. (2014b). *Mapping the World of Social Innovation: A global comparative analysis across sectors and world regions.* A deliverable of the project: Social Innovation: Driving Force of Social Change (SI-DRIVE). Dortmund: Sozialforschungsstelle.

Howaldt, J., Domanski, D., and Kaletka, C. (2016). Social Innovation: Towards a new innovation paradigm. *Mackenzie Management Review*, 17(6), 20-44.

Hu, M. and Guo, C. (2016). Fundraising Policy Reform and its Impact on Nonprofits in China: A view from the trenches. *Nonprofit Policy Forum*, 7(2), 213-236.

Hwang, D. S., Jang, W., Park, J. S. and Kim, S. (2016). Social Enterprise in South Korea. *ICSEM Working Papers*, No. 35, Liege: The International Comparative Social Enterprise Models (ICSEM) Project.

Inoguchi, T. and Carlson, M. (2006). Introduction. In Inoguchi, T. and Carlson, M. (eds.) *Governance and Democracy in Asia*. Melbourne: Trans Pacific Press.

Jang, J. (2017). The Development of Social Economy in South Korea: Focusing on the role of the state and

civil society. *Voluntas* 28(6), 2592-2613.

Japan Association of Charitable Organizations, The (2013). *Charitable and Non-profit Organizations in Japan*. Tokyo: JACO.

Jessop, B., Moulaert, F., Hulgard, L., and Hamdouch, A. (2013). Social Innovation Research: A new stage in innovation analysis? In Moulaert, F., MacCallum, D., Mehmood, A., and Hamdouch, A. (eds.) *The International Handbook on Social Innovation: Collective action, social learning and transdisciplinary research*. Cheltenham and Northampton: Edward Elgar Publishing, 110-130.

Jervis, R. (1997). *System Effects: Complexity in political and social life*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press.

Jia, X. (2017). China's Implementation of the Overseas NGO Management Law. *China Development Brief*. http://www.chinadevelopmentbrief.cn/articles/chinas-implementation-of-the-overseas-ngo-management-law/ (Retrieved 21st Mar. 2018)

Jolin, M. (2008). Innovating the White House: How the next president of the United States can spur social entrepreneurship. *Stanford Social Innovation Review,* 6(2), 23-24.

Jung, I. (2009). Explaining the Development and Adoption of Social Policy in Korea: The case of the National Basic Livelihood Security Act. *Health and Social Welfare Review*, 29(1), 52-79.

Jung, K., Jang, H., and Seo, I. (2015). Government-driven Social Enterprises in South Korea: Lessons from the social enterprise promotion program in the Seoul Metropolitan Government. *International Review of Administrative Science*s, 82(3), 1-19.

Kang, M. (2014). Korean Decentralization: Achievements and Future Challenges. In GRIPS *Achievements and Future Challenges of Decentralization in Asian Countries*. Tokyo: GRIPS, 133-150.

Kang X. and Han, H. (2007). Administrative Absorption of Society: A further probe into the state-society relationship in Chinese Mainland. *Social Sciences in China,* Special Issue: NGOs and Social Transition in China, 116-128.

Kang, X. and Han, H. (2008). Graduated Controls: The state-society relationship in Contemporary China.

Modern China, 34(1), 36-55.

Kawato, Y., Pekkanen, R. J., and Yamamoto, H. (2011). State and Civil Society in Japan, In Gaunder, A. (ed.) *Routledge Handbook of Japanese Politics*. Abingdon: Routledge, 117-129.

Kelly, M., Yutthaphonphinit, P., Seubsman, S.-A., and Sleigh, A. C. (2012). Development Policy in Thailand: From top-down to grass roots. *Asian Social Science*, 8(13), 29-39.

Kim, K. (2013). Chaebols and Their Effect on Economic Growth in South Korea, *Korean Social Sciences Review*, 3(2), 1-28.

Kim, S. (2000). *The Politics of Democratization in Korea*: *The role of civil society*. Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press.

Kim, I. and Hwang, C. (2002). *Defining the Nonprofit Sector: South Korea*. Working Papers of the Johns Hopkins Comparative Nonprofit Sector Project, No. 41. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Center for Civil Society Studies.

Kimura, E. (2013). *Political Change and Territoriality in Indonesia: Provincial proliferation*. Abingdon and New York: Routledge.

King, G., Keohane, R. O., and Verba, S. (1994). *Designing Social Inquiry*. Princeton: Princeton University Press.

Kooiman, J. (2003). *Governing as Governance*. London: SAGE Publications.

Kramer, M. R. (2017). Systems Change in a Polarized Country. *Stanford Social Innovation Review*. Online edition, April 11, 2017 https://ssir.org/articles/entry/systems_change_in_a_polarized_country (Retrieved 10th Jul. 2017).

Kwon, H. (1999). *The Welfare State in Korea: The politics of legitimation*. Basingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan.

Lake, R. W. (2016). The Subordination of Urban Policy in the Time of Financialization. In DeFilippis, J. (ed.). *Urban Policy in the Time of Obama.* Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 49-64.

Lane, M. (2014). *Decentralization & Its Discontents: An essay on class, political agency and national*

perspective in Indonesian politics. Singapore: ISEAS.

Lane, T., Ghosh, A., Hamann, J., Phillips, S., Schulze-Ghattas, M., and Tsikata, T. (1999). *IMF-Supported Programs in Indonesia, Korea, and Thailand: A preliminary assessment*. Occasional Paper 178, Washington D.C.: IMF.

Laratta, R., Nakagawa, S., and Sakurai, M. (2011). Japanese Social Enterprises: Major contemporary issues and key challenges. *Social Enterprise Journal*, 7(1), 50-68.

Lee, W. (2017). Innovating Local Government. *Social Innovation and Social Transition in East Asia*, a supplement of the *Stanford Social Innovation Review*, 18-19.

Leung, J. C. B. and Xu, Y. B. (2010). The Emergence of Social Assistance in China. In Midgley, J. and Tang, K.-L. (eds.) *Social Policy and Poverty in East Asia: The role of social security*. Abingdon: Routledge, 47-65.

Lewis, B. D. (2014). Twelve Years of Fiscal Decentralization: A balance sheet. In Hill, H. (ed.) *Regional Dynamics in a Decentralized Indonesia*. Singapore: ISEAS, 135-155.

Lim, S. H. and Endo, C. (2016). The Development of the Social Economy in the Welfare Mix: Political dynamics between the state and the third sector. *Social Science Journal*, 53(4), 486-494.

Lin, C. Y.-Y., and Chen, J. (2016). *The Impact of Societal and Social Innovation: A case-based approach*. Singapore: Springer.

Lowe, R. (1993). *The Welfare State in Britain since 1945*. Basingstoke: Macmillan Press.

Lupton, R., Hills, J., Stewart, K., and Vizard, P. (2013). *Labour's Social Policy Record: Policy, spending and outcomes 1997-2010*. Social Policy in a Cold Climate Research Report 1. London: Centre for Analysis of Social Exclusion, LSE.

Lyon, F. (2012). Social Innovation, Co-operation, and Competition: Inter-organizational relations for social enterprises in the delivery of public services. In Nicholls, A. and Murdock, A. (eds.) *Social Innovation: Blurring boundaries to reconfigure markets*. Basingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan. 139-161.

Mahi, B. R. (2014). Indonesian Decentralization: Achievements and the Future Prospect. In GRIPS

Achievements and Future Challenges of Decentralization in Asian Countries. Tokyo: GRIPS, 51-81.

Martinelli, F. (2013). Learning from Case Studies of Social Innovation in the Field of Social Services: Creatively balancing top-down universalism with bottom-up democracy. In Moulaert, F. MacCallum, D., Mehmood, A. and Hamdouch, A. (eds.) *The International Handbook on Social Innovation: Collective action, social learning and transdisciplinary research*. Cheltenham and Northampton: Edward Elgar Publishing, 346-360.

McGowan, K., Westley, F., and Tjornbo, O. (2017). The History of Social Innovation. in Westley, F., McGowan, K., and Tjornbo, O. (eds.) *The Evolution of Social Innovation*. Cheltenham and Northampton: Edward Elgar Publishing, 1-17.

Meckstroth, T. W. (1975). "Most Different Systems" and "Most Similar Systems": A study in the logic of comparative inquiry. *Comparative Political Studies*, 8(2), 132-157.

Mendell, M., Spear, R., Noya, A., and Clarence, E. (2010). *Improving Social Inclusion at the Local Level Through the Social Economy: Report for Korea*. OECD Local Economic and Employment Development Working Papers 2010/15. Paris: OECD.

Mietzner, M. (2013). *Money, Power and Ideology: Political parties in post-authoritarian Indonesia*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press.

Miharti, S., Holzhacker, R. L. and Wittek, R. (2016). Decentralization and Primary Health Care Innovations in Indonesia. In Holzhacker, R. L., Wittek, R. and Woltjer, J. (eds.) *Decentralization and Governance in Indonesi*a. New York and London: Springer, 53-78.

Mohan, A., Harsh, S., Ganesh, D., Jha, P., Raote, R., Detorre, R., and Sharma, V. (2017a). *Social Investment Landscape in Asia: Insights from North and South Asia*. Singapore: AVPN.

Mohan, A., Harsh, S., Modi, A. (2017b). *Social Investment Landscape in Asia: Insights from Southeast Asia*. Singapore: AVPN.

Moore, M.-L., Westley, F. R., Tjornbo, O., and Holroyd, C. (2012). The Loop, the Lens, and the Lesson: Using Resilience Theory to examine public policy and social innovation. In Nicholls, A., and

Murdock, A. *Social Innovation: Blurring boundaries to reconfigure markets*. Baskingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan, 89-113.

Morgan, K. J. and Campbell, A. L. (2011). *The Delegated Welfare State: Medicare, Markets, and the Governance of Social Policy*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Morgenthau, H. J. (1968). *Politics among Nations: The struggle for power and peace*. Fourth Edition. New York: Alfred A. Knopf.

Morris-Suzuki, T. (2017). Introduction: Informal Life Politics in Northeast Asia. In Morris-Suzuki, T., and Soh, E.-J. (eds.) *New Worlds from Below: Informal life politics and grassroots action in twenty-first-century Northeast Asia*. Acton: Australian National University, 1-14.

Moulaert, F., MacCallum D., and Hiller J. (2013). Social Innovation: Intuition, precept, concept, theory and practice. In Moulaert, F. MacCallum, D., Mehmood, A. and Hamdouch, A. (eds.) *The International Handbook on Social Innovation: Collective action, social learning and transdisciplinary research*. Cheltenham and Northampton: Edward Elgar Publishing, 13-24.

Mulgan, G. (2012). The Theoretical Foundations of Social Innovation. In Nicholls, A., and Murdock, A. (2012). *Social Innovation: Blurring boundaries to reconfigure markets*. Baskingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan, 33-65.

Mulgan, G., Tucker, S., Ali, R., and Sanders, B. (2007). *Social Innovation: What it is, why it matters and how it can be accelerated*. Skoll Centre for Social Entrepreneurship Working Paper, Oxford: Said Business School.

Murray, J. H. (2012). Choose Your Own Master: Social enterprise, certifications, and benefit corporation statutes. *American University Business Law Review*, 2(1), 1-53.

Murray, R., Caulier-Grice, J., and Mulgan, G. (2010). *The Open Book of Social Innovation*. Social Innovator Series, London: The Young Foundation and NESTA.

Najita, T. (2009). *Ordinary Economies in Japan: A historical perspective 1750-1950*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Nakamura, M., Siddique, S., and Bajunid, O. F. (eds.) (2001). *Islam and Civil Society in Southeast Asia*. Singapore: ISEAS.

Nasution, A. (2016). *Government Decentralization Program in Indonesia*. ADBI Working Paper 601. Tokyo: Asian Development Bank Institute.

National Institute of Population and Social Security Research (2017). *The Financial Statistics of Social Security in Japan*. Fiscal Year 2015, Tokyo: NIPSSR.

Nicholls, A. and Murdock, A. (2012). The Nature of Social Innovation. In Nicholls, A. and Murdock, A. (eds.) *Social Innovation: Blurring boundaries to reconfigure markets*. Basingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan, 1-30.

Nicholls, A., Simon, J., and Gabriel, M. (2015). Introduction: Dimensions of Social Innovation. In Nicholls, A., Simon, J., and Gabriel, M. (eds.) *New Frontiers in Social Innovation Research*. Basingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan, 1-26.

Nie, J.-B. (2016). Erosion of Eldercare in China: A socio-ethical inquiry in aging, elderly suicide and the government's responsibilities in the context of the one-child policy. *Ageing International*, 41(4), 350-365.

Nyman, M. (2009). Civil Society and the Challenges of the Post-Suharto Era. In Bunte, M. and Ufen, A. (eds.) *Democratization in Post-Suharto Indonesia*. Abingdon: Routledge, 251-275.

O'Byrne, L., Miller, M., Douse, C., Vankatesh, R., Kapucu, N. (2014). Social Innovation in the Public Sector: The case of Seoul Metropolitan Government. Journal of Economic and Social Studies, 4(1), 51-68.

Ochiai, E. (2009). Care Diamonds and Welfare Regimes in East and South-East Asian Societies: Bridging family and welfare sociology. *International Journal of Japanese Sociology*, 18(1), 60-78.

OECD (2010). *OECD Environmental Performance Reviews JAPAN*. Paris: OECD.

OECD (2011). *Fostering Innovation to Address Social Challenges*. LEED Forum on Social Innovations.

OECD (2016). *Social Expenditure Update 2016*. http://www.oecd.org/els/soc/OECD2016-Social-Expenditure-

Update.pdf (Figure from http://www.oecd.org/social/expenditure.htm) (Retrieved 11th Apr. 2017).

Ostwald, K., Tajima, Y. and Samphantharak, K. (2016). Indonesia's Decentralization Experiment: Motivations, successes, and unintended consequences. *Journal of Southeast Asian Economics* 33(2), 139-156.

Pekkanen, R. (2006). *Japan's Dual Civil Society: Members without advocates*. Stanford: Stanford University Press.

Pel, B. and Bauler, T. (2014). *The Institutionalization of Social Innovation: Between transformation and capture.* TRANSIT working paper no. 2, TRANSIT.

Pel, B., Bauler, T., Avelino, F., Backhaus, J., Ruijsink, S., Rach, S.et al. (2017). *The Critical Turning Points Database: Concept, methodology and dataset of an international transformative social innovation comparison*. TRANSIT Working Paper No. 10, TRANSIT.

Peng, I. (2009). *The Political and Social Economy of Care: Republic of Korea Research Report 3*. Geneva: UNRISD.

Phills, J. A., Deiglmeier, K., and Miller, D. T. (2008). Rediscovering Social Innovation. *Stanford Social Innovation Review,* Fall 2008, 34-43.

Pierre, J. (2000). Introduction: Understanding governance. In Pierre, J. (ed.) *Debating Governance: Authority, steering, and democracy*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1-12.

Pierson, P. (1996). The New Politics of the Welfare State. *World Politics*, 48(2), 143-179.

Potts, M. (2017). Social Innovation Comes to Pennsylvania Avenue. *Stanford Social Innovation Review*, Spring 2017, 20-27.

Prewitt, K. (2006). Foundations. In Powell, W. and Steinberg, R. (eds.) *The Non-profit Sector: A research handbook.* 2nd edition, New Haven & London: Yale University Press, 355-377.

Przeworski, A. and Teune, H. (1970). *The Logic of Comparative Social Inquiry*. New York: Wiley-Interscience.

Ramage, D. E. (1997). *Politics in Indonesia: Democracy, Islam and the ideology of tolerance*. Paperback

version, London and New York: Routledge.

Rana, P. B. and Hamid, N. (eds.) (1996). *From Centrally Planned to Market Economics: The Asian approach Volume 2 People's Republic of China and Mongolia*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Reality Check Approach (2016). *Local perspectives and experiences of the Village Law in Indonesia*. Jakarta: KOMPAK.

Rhodes, R. A. W. (1997). *Understanding Governance: Policy Networks, Governance, Reflexivity and Accountability*. Maidenhead: Open University Press.

Ricklefs, M. C. (2008). *A History of Modern Indonesia since c. 1200*. 4th edition, Basingstoke and New York: Palgrave Macmillan.

Robinson, D. T. and Stuart, T. E. (2007). Network Effects in the Governance of Strategic Alliances. *Journal of Law, Economics and Organization*, 23(1), 242-273.

Rogers, E. M. (1983). *Diffusion of Innovations*. 3rd edition, New York: Free Press.

Rosenbluth, F. M. and Thies, M. F. (2010). *Japan Transformed: Political change and economic restructuring*. Princeton: Princeton University Press.

Salamon, L. M. (1995). *Partners in Public Service*. Baltimore: John Hopkins University Press.

Salamon, L. M. and Anheier, H. K. (1998) Social Origins of Civil Society: Explaining the nonprofit sector cross-nationally. *Voluntas*, 9(3), 213-248.

Sawada, Y. (2014). Revisions to the Long-Term Care Insurance System. In Sumii, H. and Sawada, Y. (eds.) *Achievements and Future Directions of the Long-Term Care Insurance System in Japan: Toward social "kaigo" security in the global longevity society*. Okayama: University Education Press, 192-205.

Sawada, Y. and Sumii, H. (2014). Introduction to and Background of Long-Term Care Insurance in Japan: Creating and maintaining "kaigo" security". In Sumii, H. and Sawada, Y. (eds.) *ibid*. 3-16.

Schulze, G. G. and Sjahrir, B. S. (2014). Decentralization, Governance and Public Service Delivery. In Hill, H. (ed.) *Regional Dynamics in a Decentralized Indonesia*. Singapore: ISEAS, 186-207.

Schumpeter, J. A. (1994). *Capitalism, Socialism and Democracy*. Paperback reprinted version of first published in 1943, London: Routledge.

Seoul Innovation Center (2017). *Seoul Innovation Research Lab at Seoul Innovation Center 2016 Annual Report*. Seoul: Seoul Innovation Center.

Seoul Metropolitan Government. (2015). *Seoul Innovation Report*. Seoul: Seoul Metropolitan Government.

Sgaragli, F. and Giacomo Brodolini Foundation (2014). Preface. In Sgaragli, F. (ed.) *Enabling Social Innovation Ecosystems for Community-Led Territorial Development*. Rome: Fondazione Giacomo Brogolini, 7-11.

Shen, D. and Li, F. (2017). East Asia's Role in Global Social Innovation. *Stanford Social Innovation Review,* Spring 2017 Supplement, 3-4.

Shinoda, T. (2011). Prime Ministerial Leadership. In Gaunder, A. (ed.) *The Routledge Handbook of Japanese Politics*. Abingdon: Routledge, 48-59.

SI-DRIVE (2018). *Atlas of Social Innovation: New practices for a better future*. A deliverable of the project: Social Innovation: Driving Force of Social Change (SI-DRIVE). Dortmund: Sozialforschungsstelle.

Simon, K. W. (2013). *Civil society in China: The legal framework from ancient times to the "New Reform Era"*. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press.

Sorensen, E. and Torfing, J. (2006). Introduction: Governance Network Research: Towards a second generation. In Sorensen, E. and Torging, J. (eds.) *Theories of Democratic Network Governance*. London: Palgrave Macmillan, 1-21.

SSIR Editor's Note (2003). Helping Those Who Do the Important Work of Improving Society Do It Even Better. *Stanford Social Innovation Review*, Spring 2003, 4-5.

SSIR (2017). *Spring 2017 Supplement: Social Innovation and Social Transition in East Asia*. Digital Edition. http://stanford.ebookhost.net/ssir/digital/45/index.php?e=45&open=1 (Retrieved 7th Mar. 2018).

Suharyo, W. J. (2009). Indonesia's Transition to Decentralized Governance: Evolution at the local level. In Holtzappel, C. J. G. and Ramstedt, M. (eds.) *Decentralization and Regional Autonomy in Indonesia: Implementation and challenges*. Singapore: ISEAS, 75-98.

Taylor-Gooby, P. (2004). New Risks and Social Change. In Taylor-Gooby, P. (ed.) New Risks, New Welfare: The Transformation of the European Welfare State. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1-28.

Teets, J. C. (2011). Reforming Service Delivery in China: The emergence of a social innovation model. *Journal of Chinese Political Science*, Vol.17, 15-32.

TEPSIE (2014). *Social Innovation Theory and Research: A summary of the findings from TEPSIE*. A deliverable of the project: The theoretical, empirical and policy foundations for building social innovation in Europe (TEPSIE), Brussels: European Commission, DG Research.

Tjemkes, B., Vos, P., and Burgers, K. (2012). *Strategic Alliance Management*. London and New York: Routledge.

Toyota Foundation, The (2007). *30 Years of History 1974-2004*. Tokyo: The Toyota Foundation.

Tsai, L. L. (2007). *Accountability without Democracy: Solidarity groups and public goods provision in rural China*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Tsujinaka, Y. (2003). From Developmentalism to Maturity: Japan's civil society organizations in comparative perspective. In Schwartz, F. and Pharr, S. J. (eds.) *The State of Civil Society in Japan*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 83-115.

Tsuru, S. (1999). *The Political Economy of the Environment: The case of Japan*. London: The Athlone Press.

United Nations, The (2015). *The Millennium Development Goals Report 2015*. New York: United Nations.

USAID (2009). *Decentralization 2009: Stock taking on Indonesia's recent decentralization reforms Summary Report*. Washington DC: USAID.

Van Dyke, N., McCammon, H. J. (eds.) (2010). *Strategic Alliances: Coalition building and social movements*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Vatikiotis, M. R. J. (1996). *Political Change in Southeast Asia: Trimming the banyan tree.* London and New York: Routledge.

Vatikiotis, M. R. J. (1998). *Indonesian Politics Under Suharto: The rise and fall of the new order.* 3rd edition, London and New York: Routledge.

Vel, J., Zakaria, R. Y., and Bedner, A. (2017). Creating Indonesia's Village Law. *Inside Indonesia*, May 9, 2017. http://www.insideindonesia.org/creating-indonesia-s-village-law (Retrieved 13th Dec. 2017)

Wang, M. (2011). The Development of Civil Organizations and the Road to Civil Society in China. In Wang, M. (ed.) *Emerging Civil Society in China, 1978-2008.* London / Boston: Brill, 1-57.

Wang, M. and Liu, G. (2017). Incremental Co-governance: Investigation of Hangzhou Experience of Driving Reform Through Innovation. In Wang, M. (ed.) *A Discussion on Chinese Road of NGOs: Reform and co-governance by society.* Singapore: Springer.

Westley, F. (2017). Conclusion: Recognizing transformative potential. In Westley, F., McGowan, K., and Tjornbo, O. (eds.) *The Evolution of Social Innovation*, Cheltenham and Northampton: Edward Elgar Publishing, 239-255.

Westley, F. and Antadze, N. (2010). Making a Difference: Strategies for scaling social innovation. *The Innovation Journal*, 15(1), 2-9.

Westley, F., Zimmerman, B., and Patton, M. (2007). *Getting to Maybe: How the world is changed* (Paperback edition). Toronto: Vintage Canada.

Williams, M. S. (2016). Reasons to Obey: "Multiple Modernities" and constructions of political legitimacy. In Chan, J., Shin, D. C., and Williams, M. S. (eds.) *East Asian Perspectives on Political Legitimacy: Bridging the Empirical-Normative Divide.* New York: Cambridge University Press, 25-54.

Wittmayer, J., Avelino, F., Dorland, J., Pel B., and Jorgensen, M. S. (2015). *Methodological Guidelines Batch 2.* TRANSIT.

World Bank (1993). *The East Asian Miracle: Economic growth and public policy.* New York: Oxford University Press.

World Bank (2003). *Decentralizing Indonesia: A regional public expenditure review overview report*.

Washington DC: World Bank.

Xu, Y. and Zhang, X. (2010). Rural Protection in China: Reform, performance and problems. In Midgley, J.

and Tang, K.-L. (eds.) *ibid*. 116-127.

Yang, Y., Wilkinson, M. and Zhang, X. (2016). Beyond the Abolition of Dual Administration: The

challenges to NGO governance in 21st Century China. *Voluntas*, 27(5), 2292-2310.

Zhang, X. and Sun, J. (2016). *Meta-Analysis of Evaluations across the Social Innovation Fund Program:*

Final Report. Prepared for the Corporation for National and Community Service, Office of Research

and Evaluation, Fairfax: ICF International.

Zhao, X. (2001). An Analysis of Unofficial Social Organizations in China: Their emergence and growth.

The Nonprofit Review, 1(2), 133-142.

Zimmeck, M. (2010). The Compact 10 Years On: Government's approach to partnership with the voluntary

and community sector in England. *Voluntary Sector Review*, 1(1), 125-133.

In Japanese

青尾謙 (Aoo, K.) (2018a). 「ソーシャルイノベーション理論の展開と課題—日本、欧州、北米の

比較分析を中心に」『国際日本研究』, 10, 103-119. / Aoo, K. (2018a). Development and

Challenges of Social Innovation Theories: A comparative analysis of Japan, Europe, and North

America. *Journal of International and Advanced Japanese Studies*, Vol. 10, 103-119. (in Japanese)

秋葉武 (Akiba, T.) (2012). 「韓国の社会的企業と言説の多様性」 秋葉武・川瀬俊治・菊地謙・桔

川純子・広石拓司・文京洙編著. 『危機の時代の市民活動—日韓「社会的企業」最前線』.

大阪:東方出版, 165-178.

阿古智子 (Ako, T.) (2012). 「中国の「公民社会」と民主化の行方:曲折するソーシャルメディアと

政治制度改革の関係」『国際政治』, 169, 45-59.

阿古智子 (Ako, T.) (2014). 『貧者を喰らう国—中国格差社会からの警告』. 増補新版, 新潮社.

浅川澄一 (Asakawa, S.) (2017). 「介護保険の「新総合事業」開始で一体何が変わるのか？」

『ダイアモンド・オンライン』. https://diamond.jp/articles/-/129131 (Retrieved 17th Dec. 2017).

朝倉美江 (Asakura, M.) (2010). 「地域ケアシステムづくりへの挑戦」朝倉美江・太田貞司編著

『地域ケアシステムとその変革主体』. 光生館, 1-10.

阿部弘臣 (Abe, H.). (2016). 「社会ガバナンスの視点」辻中豊・崔宰栄・阿部弘臣編『現代日本

のローカル・ガバナンス・ネットワーク―自治体、住民自治組織、および非営利組織の考

察』. CAJS/ICR モノグラフシリーズ No.8, 筑波大学人文社会国際比較研究機構・国際比較

日本研究センター, 1-24. / Abe, H. (2016). A Perspective on Social Governance. In Tsujinaka, Y.

Choe, J.-Y., and Abe, H. (eds.) *Local Governance Network in Japan: Municipalities, neighborhood*

associations, and nonprofits in perspective. CAJS/ICR Monograph Series No.8. Tsukuba: ICR,

University of Tsukuba, 1-24. (in Japanese)

天児慧 (Amako, S.) (2013). 『中華人民共和国史』. 新版, 岩波書店.

天児慧 (Amako, S.) (2015). 『「中国共産党」論―習近平の野望と民主化のシナリオ』. NHK 出版.

飯島伸子 (Iijima, N.) (2000). 『環境問題の社会史』. 有斐閣.

井川博 (Ikawa, H.) (2015). 「インドネシアにおける地方自治と地方分権改革」 井川博編著 『ア

ジア諸国における地方分権と地方自治〈第 1 分冊〉』. 「アジア諸国における地方分権改革

の成果と地方自治の基盤に関する研究」研究成果報告書, 政策研究大学院大学, 11-46.

石井知章・緒形康・鈴木賢編 (Ishii, T., Ogata, Y., Suzuki, K.) (eds.) (2014). 『現代中国と市民社会

―普遍的《近代》の可能性』. 勉誠出版.

ロイド・E・イーストマン (Eastman, L. E.) 著, 上田信・深尾葉子訳 (1994). 『中国の社会』. 平

凡社. / Eastman, L. E. (1988). *Family, Fields, and Ancestors: Constancy and Change in China's*

Social and Economic History, 1550-1949. Oxford: Oxford University Press. (Japanese Translation)

磯崎典代 (Isozaki, N.) (2004). 「体制変動と市民社会のネットワーク」 辻中豊・廉戴鎬編著

『現代韓国の市民社会・利益団体―日韓比較による体制移行の研究』. 木鐸社, 51-83.

磯部靖 (Isobe, Y.) (2008). 『現代中国の中央・地方関係―広東省における地方分権と省指導者』.

慶應義塾大学出版会.

伊藤修一郎・近藤康史 (Ito, S. and Kondo, Y.) (2010). 「ガバナンス論の展開と地方政府・市民社会—理論的検討と実証に向けた操作化」 辻中豊・伊藤修一郎編著『ローカル・ガバナンス—地方政府と市民社会』. 木鐸社, 19-38. / Ito, S. and Kondo, Y. (2010). Development of Governance Theory, Local Government and Civil Society: Operationalization towards theoretical analysis and empirical proving. In Tsujinaka, Y. and Ito, S. (eds.) *Local Governance: Local government and Civil Society*. Tokyo: Bokutaku-sha, 19-38. (in Japanese)

伊藤武 (Ito, T.) (2013). 「日欧年金改革における福祉改革と福祉政治—比較事例分析からの接近」日本比較政治学会編 (2013). 『事例比較からみる福祉政治』. 日本比較政治学会年報第 15 号, ミネルヴァ書房, 1-31. / Ito, T. (2013). Welfare Reform and Welfare Politics in Pension Reform in Japan and Europe: An approach from comparative case analysis. In Japan Association for Comparative Politics (ed.) *Welfare Politics Viewed from Case Comparison.* Kyoto: Minerva Shobo, 1-31. (in Japanese)

伊藤康 (Ito, Y.) (2016). 『環境政策とイノベーション—高度成長期日本の硫黄酸化物対策の事例研究』. 中央経済社.

井上堅太郎 (Inoue, K.) (2006). 『日本環境史概説』. 大学教育出版.

井上秀之 (Inoue, H.) (2010). 「世界における社会イノベータの活躍」 金子郁容・國領二郎・厳網林編 『社会イノベータへの招待—「変化をつくる」人になる』. 慶應義塾大学出版会, 29-49.

猪口孝 (Inoguchi, T.) (2014). 『データから読むアジアの幸福度—生活の質の国際比較』. 岩波書店.

猪口孝・藤井誠二 (Inogchi, T. and Fujii, S.) (2011). 「日本—生活の質、社会関係資本、ガバナンスについての市民の認識」猪口孝編著『アジア・バロメーター—東アジアと東南アジアの価値観』. 慈学社, 137-161.

今井貴子 (Imai, T.) (2016). 「イギリスにおける政権交代と福祉ガバナンスの変容」大沢真理・佐

藤岩夫編 『ガバナンスを問い直す[II]—市場・社会の変容と改革政治』. 東京大学出版会, 173-198.

岩淵泰 (Iwabuchi, Y.) (2018). 「環境まちづくりを問い直す（上）　みずしま財団の誕生から」 『山陽新聞デジタル』2018 年 5 月 15 日.

http://www.sanyonews.jp/article/715441/1/?rct=machitan (Retrieved 24th Sep. 2018)

宇井純 (Ui, J.) (2014). 『宇井純セレクション(2) 公害に第三者はいない』. 新泉社.

上野千鶴子 (Ueno, C.) (2011). 『ケアの社会学』. 太田出版.

上山信一 (Ueyama, S.) (2002). 『「政策連携」の時代—地域・自治体・NPO のパートナーシップ』. 日本評論社.

後房雄 (Ushiro, F.) (2009). 『NPO は公共サービスを担えるか—次の 10 年への課題と戦略』. 法律文化社.

内山融 (Uchiyama, Y.) (2010). 「日本政治のアクターと政策決定パターン」『季刊政策・経営研究』, Vol.3, 1-18.

ARC 国別情報研究会 (ARC) (2017). 『ARC レポート インドネシア 2017/18 年版』. ARC 国別情報研究会.

大井智香子 (Ooi, C.) (2010). 「高山市社会福祉協議会の住民組織化活動」　朝倉美江・太田貞司編著『地域ケアシステムとその変革主体』. 光生館, 107-122.

大西裕 (Onishi, Y.) (2014). 『先進国・韓国の憂鬱—少子高齢化・経済格差、グローバル化』. 中央公論新社.

大村和正 (Ohmura, K.) (2013). 「イギリス」　鎮目真人・近藤正基編著 『比較福祉国家—理論・計量・各国事例』. ミネルヴァ書房, 244-266.

大室悦賀 (Ohmuro, N.) (2009). 「ソーシャル・イノベーション理論の系譜」『京都マネージメント・レビュー』 Vol. 15, 13-40. / Ohmuro, N. (2009). A Lineage of Social Innovation Theory. *Kyoto Management Review*. 15, 13-40. (in Japanese)

岡田一郎 (Okada, I.) (2016). 『革新自治体—熱狂と挫折に何を学ぶか』. 中央公論新社.

岡村志嘉子 (Okamura, S.) (2017). 「中国の慈善法と慈善事業の発展」『外国の立法』, Vol. 271, 250-274.

岡本正明 (Okamoto, M.) (2012). 「逆コースを歩むインドネシアの地方自治―中央政府による「ガバメント」強化への試み」 船津鶴代・永井史男編 『変わりゆく東南アジアの地方自治』. アジア経済研究所, 27-66.

岡本正明 (Okamoto, M.) (2015a). 「ユドヨノ政権の 10 年間―政治的安定・停滞と市民社会の胎動」川村晃一編 『新興民主主義大国インドネシア―ユドヨノ政権の 10 年とジョコウィ大統領の誕生』. アジ研選書 40, アジア経済研究所, 159-184.

岡本正明 (Okamoto, M.) (2015b). 『暴力と適応の政治学―インドネシア民主化と地方政治の安定』. 京都大学学術出版会.

尾崎力 (Ozaki, T.) (2001). 「介護保険と NPO」 山岡義典・早瀬昇・石川両一編 『NPO 非営利セクターの時代―多様な協働の可能性をさぐる』. ミネルヴァ書房, 221-237.

落合恵美子 (2013). 「東アジアの低出生率と家族主義―半圧縮近代としての日本」 落合恵美子編. 『親密圏と公共圏の再編成―アジア近代からの問い』. 京都:京都大学学術出版会, 67-97.

落合恵美子・阿部彩・埋橋孝文・田宮遊子・四方理人 (2010). 「日本におけるケア・ダイアモンドの再編成―介護保険は「家族主義」を変えたか」『海外社会保障研究』, Vol. 170, 4-19. / Ochiai, E. et al. (2010). Reconfiguration of the Care Diamond in Japan: The impact of the LTCI on "Familialism". *The Review of Comparative Social Security Research (Kaigai Shakai Hosho Kenkyu)*. Vol. 170, 4-19. (in Japanese)

郭莉莉 (Guo, L.) (2017). 『日中の少子高齢化と福祉レジーム―育児支援と高齢者扶養・介護』. 北海道大学出版会.

郭定平・舒旻 (Guo, D. and Min, S.) (2011). 「中国―中国における福祉観と社会的調和」猪口孝編著『アジア・バロメーター―東アジアと東南アジアの価値観』. 慈学社出版, 39-59.

柏木宏 (Kashiwagi, H.) (2004). 『NPO 法人運営・税務完全マニュアル―誰にでもわかる NPO の

実務』. J リサーチ出版.

柏木宏 (Kashiwagi, H.) (2008).　『NPO と政治－アドボカシーと社会変革の新たな担い手のために』. 明石書店.

金川幸司 (Kanagawa, K.) (2008).　『協働型ガバナンスと NPO－イギリスのパートナーシップ政策を事例として』. 晃洋書房.

金子郁容・國領二郎・厳網林編 (Kaneko, I. et al.) (2010).　『社会イノベータへの招待－「変化をつくる」人になる』. 慶應義塾大学出版会. / Kaneko, I., Kokuryo, J., and Gen, M. (eds.) (2010). *Invitation to Social Innovator: Becoming a person who makes change*. Tokyo: Keio Daigaku Shuppankai. (in Japanese)

金子能宏 (Kaneko, Y.) (2014).　「社会保障研究のマクロ的国際比較―比較福祉国家論の展開」 西村周三・京極高宣・金子能宏編著　『社会保障の国際比較研究―制度再考にむけた学際的・政策科学的アプローチ』. ミネルヴァ書房, 19-40.

株本千鶴 (Kabumoto, C.) (2006).　「韓国の自活起業―公的扶助による就労支援の可能性」野口定久編　『福祉国家の形成・再編と社会福祉政策』. 中央法規出版, 125-140.

川村晃一編 (Kawamura, K.) (2015).　『新興民主主義大国インドネシア―ユドヨノ政権の 10 年とジョコウィ大統領の誕生』. アジ研選書 40, アジア経済研究所.

川村匡由 (Kawamura, M.) (2014).　『介護保険再点検－制度実施 10 年の評価と 2050 年のグランドデザイン』. ミネルヴァ書房.

岸本美緒 (Kishimoto, M.) (1998).　「「中国」とは何か」　尾方勇・岸本美緒編　『中国史』. 山川出版社, 3-23.

岸本美緒 (Kishimoto, M.) (2012).　『地域社会論再考―明清史論集 2』. 研文出版.

桔川純子 (Kikkawa, J.) (2012).　「韓国のコミュニティづくりの実践―ソンミサン・マウルの新たな挑戦」　秋葉他編著 前掲書. 203-217.

金氣興 (Kim, K.) (2015).　「韓国における社会的企業の展開」　池本幸生・松井範惇編著　『連帯経済とソーシャル・ビジネス―貧困削減、富の再分配のためのケイパビリティ・アプロー

チ』. 明石書店, 185-207.

金成垣 (Kim, S.) (2008). 『後発福祉国家論―比較のなかの韓国と東アジア』. 東京大学出版会.

金成垣 (Kim, S.) (2014). 「日本―戦後における社会保障制度の成立とその特徴」 田多英範編著

『世界はなぜ社会保障制度を創ったのか―主要9カ国の比較研究』. ミネルヴァ書房, 231-

263.

金成垣 (Kim, S.) (2016). 『福祉国家の日韓比較―「後発国」における雇用保障・社会保障』. 明

石書店.

経済企画庁 (Economic Planning Agency) (2000). 『特定非営利活動法人の活動・運営の実態に関す

る調査 報告書』. 経済企画庁.

玄大松 (Hyun, D.) (2011). 「韓国―文化的変容を遂げつつある儒教社会」猪口孝編著『アジア・

バロメーター―東アジアと東南アジアの価値観』. 慈学社, 111-136.

厚生労働省 (MoHLW). (2016). 『平成28年介護サービス施設・事業所調査の概況（施設・事業所

の状況 詳細票編)』. 厚生労働省ウェブサイト

https://www.mhlw.go.jp/toukei/saikin/hw/kaigo/service16/index.html (Retrieved 11th Sep. 2018）

厚生労働省 (MoHLW). (2017). 『「地域共生社会」の実現に向けて（当面の改革工程)』. 厚生労

働省「我が事・丸ごと」地域共生社会実現本部.

黄媚 (Huang, M.) (2014a). 「制度」 辻中豊・李景鵬・小嶋華津子編 『現代中国の市民社会・利

益団体―比較の中の中国』. 木鐸社, 85-109.

黄媚 (Huang, M.) (2014b). 「民弁非企業単位」 辻中・李・小嶋編 前掲書, 199-216.

高齢者介護研究会 (Elderly Care Study Group) (2003). 『2015年の高齢者介護～高齢者の尊厳を支

えるケアの確立に向けて』. 厚生労働省.

古賀章一 (2010). 『中国都市社会と草の根NGO』. 御茶の水書房. / The Structural Change and

Grass-Roots NGOs in the Urban Area of China: Based on case researches in Beijing. Ochanomizu

Shobo. (in Japanese)

小嶋華津子・小橋洋平 (Kojima, N. and Kobashi, Y.) (2014). 「基金会」 辻中・李・小嶋編 前掲書,

217-233.

小島廣光 (Kojima, H.) (2003). 『政策形成とNPO法－問題、政策、そして政治』. 有斐閣.

崔章集著 (Choi, S.), 磯崎典世他訳 (2012). 『民主化以後の韓国民主主義―起源と危機』. 岩波書店.

斉藤淳 (Saito, J.) (2010). 『自民党長期政権の政治経済学―利益誘導政治の自己矛盾』. 勁草書房.

坂本文武 (Sakamoto, F.) (2004). 『NPOの経営－資金調達から運営まで』. 日本経済新聞社.

坂本治也・辻中豊 (Sakamoto, H. and Tsujinaka, Y.). (2012). 「NPO政治の分析視角」 辻中豊・坂本治也・山本英弘編著 『現代日本のNPO政治―市民社会の新局面』. 木鐸社, 23-48. / Sakamoto, H. and Tsujinaka, Y. (2012). A Perspective of Non-Profit Organization Politics. In Tsujinaka, Y., Sakamoto, H., and Yamamoto, H. (eds.) *The Politics of Non-Profit Organization in Contemporary Japan: A new stage of civil society*. Tokyo: Bokutaku Sha, 23-48. (in Japanese)

佐藤進 (Sato, S.) (2003). 『介護保険運営における自治体の課題』. 京都:法律文化社.

沢井実・谷本雅之 (Sawai, M. and Tanimoto, M.) (2016). 『日本経済史―近世から現代まで』. 有斐閣. / Sawai, M. and Tanimoto, M. (2016). *The Economic History of Japan: From the early modern era to the present*. Tokyo: Yuhikaku. (in Japanese)

サラモン, L. M. 著、江上哲監・大野哲明訳 (2007). 『NPOと公共サービス－政府と民間のパートナーシップ』. ミネルヴァ書房. / Salamon, L. M. (1995). *Partners in Public Service: Government-nonprofit relations in the modern welfare state*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press. (Japanese translation)

島上宗子 (Shimagami, M.) (2012). 「インドネシア分権化時代の村落改革―「村落自治」をめぐる理念と現実」船津・永井編 前掲書. 67-104.

JICA (Japan International Cooperation Agency) (2004). 『日本の産業公害対策経験—開発途上国と価格、市場、クリーナープロダクションの観点から』. JICA.

朱珉 (Zhu, M.) (2014). 「中国—『単位』保障から社会保障制度へ」 田多英範編著 『世界はなぜ社会保障制度を創ったのか—主要9カ国の比較研究』. ミネルヴァ書房, 297-331.

朱珉 (Zhu, M.) (2017). 「「全面的小康社会」の実現に向けての貧困対策―「精準扶貧」を中心に」 谷口洋志編著 『中国政治経済の構造的転換』. 中央大学出版部, 89-106.

ジョセフ・アロイス・シュンペーター (Schumpeter, J. A.), 中山伊知郎・東畑誠一訳 (1937). 『經濟發展の理論―企業者利潤・資本・信用・利子及び景氣の回転に関する一研究』. 岩波書店.

徐宇珊・李妍焱 (Xu, Y. and Li, Y.) (2008). 「中国における草の根 NGO の現状」 李妍焱編著 『台頭する中国の草の根 NGO―市民社会への道を探る』. 恒星社, 3-19.

白石隆 (Shiraishi, T.) (1997). 『スカルノとスハルト―偉大なるインドネシアをめざして』. 岩波書店.

白石隆 (Shiraishi, T.) (2006). 『新版 インドネシア』. NTT 出版.

白石隆 (Shiraishi, T.) (2010). 「インドネシアにおいて経済成長の政治はいかにして復活したか」 大塚啓二郎・白石隆編著 『国家と経済発展―望ましい国家の姿を求めて』. 東洋経済新報社, 9-29.

白澤政和 (Shirasawa, M.) (2011). 『「介護保険制度」のあるべき姿―利用者主体のケアマネジメントをもとに』. 筒井書房.

沈潔 (Shen, J.) (2014). 『中国の社会福祉改革は何を目指そうとしているのか―社会主義・資本主義の調和』. ミネルヴァ書房. / Shen, J. (2014). *What China's Social Welfare is Aiming: The harmony of socialism and capitalism*. Kyoto: Minerva Shobo. (in Japanese)

沈潔 (Shen, J.) (2016). 「ポスト改革期の中国社会保障」 沈潔・澤田ゆかり編著 (2016). 『ポスト改革期の中国社会保障はどうなるのか―選別主義から普遍主義への転換の中で』. ミネルヴァ書房, 1-19.

沈載虎 (Shim, J.) (2011). 「韓国社会福祉サービスの変化と地域福祉」後藤澄江・小松理佐子・野口定久編『家族／コミュニティの変貌と福祉社会の開発』. 中央法規出版, 151-165.

菅谷広宣 (Sugaya, H.) (2013). 『ASEAN 諸国の社会保障』. 日本評論社. / Sugaya, H. (2013). *Social Security in ASEAN Countries*. Tokyo: Nihon Hyouron Sha. (in Japanese)

鈴木賢 (Suzuki, K.) (2014). 「権力に従順な中国的「市民社会」の法的構造」 石井・緒形・鈴木編 前掲書. 536-565.

薛東勲・春木育美 (Seol, D. and Haruki, I.) (2011). 「韓国社会が直面する 3 つの課題」 春木育美・薛東勲編著 『韓国の少子高齢化と格差社会—日韓比較の視座から』. 慶應義塾大学出版会, 1-18.

千恵蘭 (Cheon, H.) (2018). 「韓国原州における協同組合運動についての一考察—「原州協同社会経済ネットワーク」の取り組みを中心に」『佛教大学大学院紀要』, Vol. 46, 67-80.

田尾雅夫 (Tao, M.) (2004). 『実践 NPO マネジメント—経営管理のための理念と技法』. ミネルヴァ書房.

高橋紘士編 (Takahashi, H.) (2012). 『地域包括ケアシステム』. オーム社.

高原明生・前田宏子 (Takahara, A. and Maeda, H.) (2014). 『開発主義の時代へ—1972-2014』. 岩波書店.

高安雄一 (Takayasu, T.) (2014). 『韓国の社会保障—「低福祉・低負担」社会保障の分析』. 学文社.

高橋勅徳・木村隆之・石黒督朗 (Takahashi, M, Kimura, T., and Ishiguro, T.) (2018). 『ソーシャル・イノベーションを理論化する—切り拓かれる社会企業家の新たな実践』. 文眞堂. / *Theorizing Social Innovation: To discover new practice of social entrepreneurship.* (in Japanese)

田多英範 (Tada, H.) (2014). 「序論 社会保障制度とは何か」 田多英範編著 『世界はなぜ社会保障制度を創ったのか—主要 9 カ国の比較研究』. ミネルヴァ書房, 1-19.

田中弥生 (Tanaka, Y.) (2008). 『NPO 新時代—市民性創造のために』. 明石書店.

田中弥生 (Tanaka, Y.) (2011). 『市民社会政策論—3.11 後の政府・NPO・ボランティアを考えるために』. 明石書店.

谷本寛治・大室悦賀・大平修司・土肥将敦・古村公久 (Tanimoto, K., Ohmoro, N., Ohira, S., Doi, M., and Komura, K.) (2013). 『ソーシャル・イノベーションの創出と普及』. NTT 出版. / Tanimoto, K., Ohmoro, N., Ohira, S., Doi, M., and Komura, K. (2013). *Creation and Diffusion of*

Social Innovation. Tokyo: NTT Shyuppan. (in Japanese)

玉村雅敏編著 (Tamamura, M.) (2014). 『社会イノベーションの科学—政策マーケティング・SROI・討論型世論調査』. 勁草書房. / Tamamura, M. (ed.) (2014). *Science for Social Innovation*. Tokyo: Keiso Shobo. (in Japanese)

趙瑋琳 (Zhao, W.) (2015). 「中国における社会起業家の増加とソーシャルイノベーションの動向に関する考察」 『研究・イノベーション学会 第 30 回年次学術大会講演要旨集』.

趙秀梅 (Zhao, X.) (2010). 「都市部基層政府と NGO の連携—「社区」における出稼ぎ労働者NGO 調査から」 菱田雅晴編著 『中国 基層からのガバナンス』. 法政大学出版局, 211-234.

趙昌鉉 (Cho, C.)著, 阪堂博之・阪堂千津子訳 (2007). 『現代韓国の地方自治』. 法政大学出版局.

張継元 (Zhang, J.) (2012). 「東アジア福祉モデルと社会資本—単数、それとも複数？」園田茂人編著『勃興する東アジアの中産階級』. 勁草書房, 207-232.

陳瑋芬 (Chen, W.) (2009). 「張謇・熊希齢にみる近代社会公益思想の展開」 陶徳民・姜克實・見城悌治・桐原健真編 『東アジアにおける公益思想の変容—近世から近代へ』. 日本経済評論社, 31-51.

塚本一郎・金子郁容編著 (Tsukamoto, I. and Kaneko, I.) (2017). 『ソーシャルインパクト・ボンドとは何か—ファイナンスによる社会イノベーションの可能性』. ミネルヴァ書房. / Tsukamoto, I. and Kaneko, I. (2017). *What is Social Impact Bond: A potential for social innovation by finance*. Tokyo: Minerva Shobo. (in Japanese)

塚本一郎・柳澤敏勝・山岸秀雄編著 (Tsukamoto, I., Yanagisawa, T., and Yamagishi, H.) (2007). 『イギリス非営利セクターの挑戦－NPO・政府の戦略的パートナーシップ－』. ミネルヴァ書房. / Tsukamoto, I., Yanagisawa, T., and Yamagishi, H. (eds.) (2007). *The Nonprofit Sector in Britain: Beyond the Crossroads*. Kyoto: Minerva Shobo. (in Japanese)

辻中豊 (Tsujinaka, Y.) (2010). 「序章」 辻中豊・伊藤修一郎編 『ローカル・ガバナンス—地方政府と市民社会』. 木鐸社, 9-17. / Tsujinaka, Y. (2010). Introduction. In Tsujinaka, Y. and Ito, S. (eds.). *Local Governance: Local government and Civil Society*. Tokyo: Bokutaku Sha, 9-17. (in

Japanese)

辻中豊 (Tsujinaka, Y.) (2012a). 「まえがき」 辻中豊・坂本治也・山本英弘編著 『現代日本の NPO 政治—市民社会の新局面』. 木鐸社, 3-15. / Tsujinaka, Y. (2012). Foreword. In Tsujinaka, Y., Sakamoto, H., and Yamamoto, H. (eds.) *The Politics of Non-Profit Organization in Contemporary Japan: A new stage of civil society*. Tokyo: Bokutaku Sha. (in Japanese)

辻中豊 (Tsujinaka, Y.) (2012b). 『政治学入門—公的決定の構造・アクター・状況』. 放送大学教育振興会.

辻中豊 (Tsujinaka, Y.) (2014). 「結論」 辻中豊・李景鵬・小嶋華津子編著 『現代中国の市民社会・利益団体—比較の中の中国』. 木鐸社, 373-388.

辻中豊・小嶋華津子 (Tsujinaka, Y. and Kojima, N.) (2014). 「序章」 辻中・李・小嶋編著 前掲書. 15-32.

辻中豊・崔宰栄 (Tsujinaka, Y. and Choi, S.) (2004). 「団体形成と政治体制の変化—国家コーポラティズムから労働政治を経て「普通」の多元主義へ」 辻中豊・廉戴鎬編著 前掲書. 101-139.

辻中豊・山本英弘・久保慶明 (Tsujinaka, Y. et al.) (2010). 「日本における団体の形成と存立」辻中豊・森裕樹編著『現代社会集団の政治機能—利益団体と市民社会』. 木鐸社, 33-64. / Tsujinaka, Y., Yamamoto, H., and Kubo, Y. (2010). Formation and Existence of Organizations in Japan. In Tsujinaka, Y. and Mori, H. (eds.) *Political Functions of Social Organizations in Contemporary Japan: Faces of interest group and those of civil society*. Bokutaku Sha, 33-64. (in Japanese)

辻中豊・李景鵬・袁瑞軍 (Tsujinaka, Y. et al.) (2014). 「方法」 辻中・李・小嶋編著 前掲書. 35-50.

辻元清美・早瀬昇・松原明 (Tsujimoto, K. et al.) (2000). 『NPO はやわかり Q&A』. 岩波ブックレット No. 511, 岩波書店.

都留重人 (Tsuru, S.) (2001). 『都留重人自伝—いくつもの岐路を回顧して』. 岩波書店. / Tsuru, S. (2001). *Memoir of Tsuru Shigeto: Looking back on numerous crossroads*. Tokyo: Iwanami Shoten. (in Japanese)

鄭力軒・林宗弘・簫新煌 (Cheng, L. et al.) (2011)．「東アジアにおける福祉政策の再検討」園田茂人編著『リスクの中の東アジア』．勁草書房, 115-137.

滕鑑 (Tang, J.) (2017)．『中国の体制移行と経済発展』．岡山大学経済学部.

陶徳民 (Tao, D.) (2009)．「東アジアの救済施設としての社倉—中井竹山『社倉私議』考」　陶徳民・姜克實・見城悌治・桐原健真編　前掲書. 31-51.

唐亮 (Tang, L.) (2012)．『現代中国の政治—「開発独裁」とそのゆくえ』．岩波書店.

富沢賢治 (Tomizawa, K.). (1999)．「非営利・協同セクターとは何か」川口清史・富沢賢治編『福祉社会と非営利・協同セクター——ヨーロッパの挑戦と日本の課題』．日本経済評論社, 17-28.

友澤悠季 (Tomozawa, Y.) (2014)．『「問い」としての公害—環境社会学者・飯島伸子の思索』．勁草書房.

内閣府 (Cabinet Office) (2011)．『平成 23 年度　特定非営利活動法人の実態及び認定特定非営利活動法人制度の利用状況に関する調査（概要)』．内閣府.

内閣府 (Cabinet Office) (2016a)．『平成 28 年度　市民の社会貢献に関する実態調査』．内閣府.

内閣府 (Cabinet Office) (2016b)．『平成 28 年版　高齢社会白書』．内閣府.

内閣府 (Cabinet Office) (2018)．『平成 29 年度　特定非営利活動法人に関する実態調査』．内閣府.

長島祐基 (Nagashima, Y.) (2016)．「都立多摩社会教育会館市民活動サービスコーナー資料とそのアーカイブズ化に関する考察」　『国文学研究資料館紀要　アーカイブズ研究篇』Vol. 12, 75-95. / Nagashima, Y. (2016). Examination of Archiving the Records of The Service Corner for Citizen Activities in the Tokyo Metropolitan Tama Public Institution of Social Education. *The Bulletin of the National Institute of Japanese Literature*. Vol. 12, 75-95. (in Japanese)

仁平典宏 (Nihei, N.) (2011)．『「ボランティア」の誕生と終焉—〈贈与のパラドックス〉の知識社会学』．名古屋大学出版会.

日本 NPO 学会編 (Japan NPO Research Association) (2017)．『東日本大震災後設立の NPO における活動実態と今後の展望　調査報告書』．日本 NPO 学会.

Nippon Institute for Research Advancement (NIRA) (1994). 『市民公益活動基盤整備に関する調査研究』. NIRA 政策研究報告書, NIRA 総合研究開発機構.

沼尾波子 (Numao, N.) (2014). 「地域包括ケアシステムにおける自治体行財政運営の課題」 宮本太郎編著 『地域包括ケアと生活保障の再編―新しい「支え合い」システムを創る』. 明石書店, 119-150.

野口悠紀雄 (Noguchi, Y.) (2015). 『戦後経済史―私たちはどこで間違えたのか』. 東洋経済新報社.

野中郁次郎・廣瀬文乃・平田透 (Nonaka, I. et al.) (2014). 『実践ソーシャルイノベーション―知を価値に変えたコミュニティ・企業・NPO』. 千倉書房. / Nonaka, I., Hirose, A., and Hirata, T. (2014). *Social Innovation Practice: Community / Business / NPO changing knowledge to value*s. Tokyo: Chikura Shobo. (in Japanese)

朴姫淑 (Park, H.) (2016). 「参加と協働に潜む葛藤―地域における福祉ガバナンス」大沢真理・佐藤岩夫編 『ガバナンスを問い直す[I]―越境する理論のゆくえ』 東京大学出版会, 135-157.

朴元淳 (Park, W.) (2012). 「日韓の市民社会・社会的企業を語る」 秋葉他編著 前掲書. 12-38.

橋本理 (Hashimoto, S.). (2017). 「韓国における社会的経済組織の最近の動向―社会的協同組合と社会的企業の事例を中心に」『関西大学社会学部紀要』, 49(1), 33-61.

橋本吉広 (Hashimoto, Y.) (2010). 「「非営利・協同」と地域ケアシステム」 朝倉美江・太田貞司編著 『地域ケアシステムとその変革主体』. 光生館, 175-190.

橋谷弘 (Hashiya, H.) (2000). 「経済建設と国際化の進展」 武田幸男編 『朝鮮史』. 山川出版社, 363-436.

服部篤子・武藤清・澁澤健編 (Hattori, A. et al.) (2010). 『ソーシャル・イノベーション―営利と非営利を超えて』. 日本経済評論社. / Hattori, A., Muto, K., and Shibusawa, K. (eds.) (2010). *Social Innovation: Beyond for profit and nonprofit*. Tokyo: Nihon Keizai Hyoronsha. (in Japanese)

服部民夫 (Hattori, T.) (2005). 「1980 年代韓国の社会経済的変化―韓国にとって 80 年代というのはどのような時代だったのか？」 服部民夫・金文朝編 『韓国社会と日本社会の変容―市

民・市民運動・環境』. 慶應義塾大学出版会, 1-33.

ユルゲン・ハーバーマス著, 細谷貞雄訳 (Habermas, J.) (1994). 『公共性の構造転換：市民社会の
一カテゴリーについての探求』. 第 2 版, 未来社. / Habermas, J. (1994). *The Structural
Transformation of the Public Sphere: An inquiry into a category of bourgeois society*. Tokyo: Mirai
Sya. (Japanese translation)

濱田江里子・金成垣 (Hamada and Kim) (2018). 「社会的投資戦略の総合評価」三浦まり編 『社
会への投資―個人を支えるつながりを築く』. 岩波書店, 3-30.

林雄二郎・今田忠編 (Hayashi, Y. and Imata, T.) (eds.) (1999). 『フィランソロピーの思想―NPO と
ボランティア』. 日本経済評論社.

早瀬昇・松原明 (2004). 『NPO がわかる Q&A』. 岩波ブックレット No. 618, 岩波書店.

原田晃樹 (Harada, K.) (2013). 「サード・セクターと政府セクターの協働―日英の政策動向とアカ
ウンタビリティ」 藤井敦史・原田晃樹・大高研道編著. 前掲書. 144-175. / Harada, K.
(2013). The Collaboration Between the Third Sector and the Governmental Sector: Policy
development and accountability. In Fujii, A., Harada, K., and Ootaka, K. (eds.) (2013). *ibid*. 144-
175. (in Japanese)

原田峻 (Harada, S.) (2015). 「NPO 法改正・新寄付税制の政策過程―唱道連合と政策志向的学習
の変遷に着目して」『ノンプロフィット・レビュー』, 15(1), 1-12.

原田峻 (Harada, S.) (2017). 「NPO 法制定過程における立法運動の組織間連携―分野内／分野間
の連携に着目して」『ノンプロフィット・レビュー』, 17(2), 77-87.

ハンサリム生活協同組合 (Hansalim) (2016). 『人と人 人と自然 またいっしょに もっと新し
く』. ハンサリム生活協同組合. http://www.hansalim.or.kr/wp-content/uploads/2016/06/2016-
0622.pdf (Retrieved 7th Apr. 2018)

サミュエル・P・ハンチントン著、坪郷實・中道寿一・藪野祐三訳 (Huntington, S. P.) (1995). 『第
三の波―20 世紀後半の民主化』. 三嶺書房. / Huntington, S. P. (1991). *The Third Wave:
Democratization in the late twentieth century*. (Japanese Translation)

クリストファー・ピアソン (Pierson, C.) (2002). 「21 世紀へと向かう福祉国家」 加藤哲郎・渡辺
雅男編 『一橋大学国際シンポジウム 20 世紀の夢と現実―戦争・文明・福祉』. 彩流社,
63-74.

菱田雅晴編著 (Hishida, M.) (ed.) (2010). 『中国 基層からのガバナンス』. 法政大学出版局.

廣瀬輝夫 (Horose, T.) (2014). 『介護・看護サービス統計データ集 2015』. 三冬社. / Hirose, T.
(2014). *Statistical Data of Nursing Care Service 2015*. Tokyo: Santo Sha. (in Japanese)

夫馬進 (Fuma, S.) (2009). 「中国社会福祉史上における近代の始まり―特に「教養兼施」の「新
しさ」について」 陶徳民・姜克實・見城悌治・桐原健真編 前掲書. 195-228.

福岡市保健福祉局高齢社会部高齢社会政策課 (Fukuoka City) (2017). 「ICT を活用した地域包括ケ
アシステムの構築―保険外サービスの活用と創出に向けて」. 日本総研における発表資
料. http://www.jri.co.jp/MediaLibrary/file/column/opinion/detail/20170330_4.pdf (Retrieved
20th Apr. 2018)

福永文夫 (Fukunaga, F.) (2014). 『日本占領史 1945-1952―東京・ワシントン・沖縄』. 中央公論
新社.

藤井敦史・原田晃樹・大高研道編著 (Fujii, A., Harada, K., and Omichi, K.) (2013). 『闘う社会的企
業―コミュニティ・エンパワーメントの担い手』. 勁草書房. / Fujii, A., Harada, K., and
Ootaka, K. (eds.) (2013). *Struggling Social Enterprises: A bearer of community empowerment*.
Tokyo: Keiso Shobo. (in Japanese)

藤川賢 (Fujikawa, K.) (2017). 「解決と放置をめぐる社会過程」 藤川賢・渡辺伸一・堀畑まなみ
編 『公害・環境問題の放置構造と解決過程』. 東信堂, 17-42.

船津鶴代・永井史男 (Funatsu, T. and Nagain, F.) (2012). 『変わりゆく東南アジアの地方自治』. ア
ジ研選書 28, アジア経済研究所.

プラティクノ (Pratikno) (2011). 「インドネシア―政治改革から 8 年、不満足な結果」猪口孝編
著 『アジア・バロメーター―東アジアと東南アジアの価値観』. 慈学社出版, 271-282.

ビクター・ペストフ著、藤田暁男他訳 (Pestoff, V.) (2000). 『福祉社会と市民民主主義―協同組合

と社会的企業の役割』. 日本経済評論社. / Pestoff, V. (2000). Beyond the Market and State:

Social enterprise and civil democracy in a welfare society. Tokyo: Nihon Keizai Hyouron Sha.

(Japanese translation)

ダニエル・A・ベル著、施光恒・蓮見二郎訳 (Bell, D. A.) (2006) 『「アジア的価値」とリベラル・

デモクラシー—東洋と西洋の対話』. 風行社. / Bell, D. A. (2000). *East Meets West: Human

Rights and Democracy in East Asia*. Princeton University Press. (Japanese translation)

中村陽一 (Nakamura, Y.) (2000). 「「市民活動」の登場と展開」中村陽一・日本 NPO センター編

『日本の NPO／2000』. 日本評論社, 31-39.

本台進・中村和敏 (Hondai, S. and Nakamura, K.) (2017). 『インドネシアの経済発展と所得格差—

日本の経験と比較分析』. 日本評論社.

本名純 (Honna, J.) (2013). 『民主化のパラドックス—インドネシアにみるアジア政治の深層』.

岩波書店.

馬長山 (Ma, C.) (2014). 「中国市民社会論研究の現状と課題・展望—市民社会と法治国家間の関

係研究に基づく考察」 石井・緒形・鈴木編 前掲書. 77-101.

前澤政次 (Maezawa, M.) (2011). 「病院機能分化と「地域包括ケア」」太田貞司・森本佳樹編著

『地域包括ケアシステム—その考え方と課題』. 光生館.

増田寛也編著 (Masuda, H.) (2014). 『地方消滅—東京一極集中が招く人口急減』. 中央公論新社.

増田雅暢 (Masuda, M.) (2013). 「アジアの社会保障」 増田雅暢・金貞任編著 『アジアの社会保

障』. 法律文化社, 1-23.

升味準之輔 (Masumi, J.) (2005). 「戦後史の起源と位相」 中村政則・天川晃・尹健次・五十嵐武

士編 『占領と改革』. 戦後日本 占領と戦後改革 2, 岩波書店, 1-30.

松江暁子 (Matsue, A.) (2014). 「韓国—IMF 経済危機と社会保障制度の創設」 田多秀範編著

(2014). 『世界はなぜ社会保障制度を創ったのか—主要 9 カ国の比較研究』. ミネルヴァ書

房, 265-296.

松下啓一 (Matsushita, K.) (2002). 『新しい公共と自治体―自治体はなぜ NPO とパートナーシッ

プを組まなければいけないのか』. 信山社.

丸川知雄 (Marukawa, T.) (2013). 『現代中国経済』. 有斐閣.

見市健 (Miichi, K.) (2004). 『インドネシア　イスラーム主義のゆくえ』. 平凡社.

道田悦代 (Michida, E.) (2005). 「マクロ経済の動向と課題―投資の回復に向けて」 石田正美編

『インドネシア再生への挑戦』. アジア経済研究所, 58-74.

三菱 UFJ リサーチ&コンサルティング(Mitsubishi UFJ Research & Consulting) (2010). 「地域包括ケ

ア研究会 報告書」. 三菱 UFJ リサーチ&コンサルティング.

宮崎市定 (Miyazaki, I.) (1963). 『科挙―中国の試験地獄』. 中央公論新社.

宮本憲一 (Miyamoto, K.) (2014a). 『戦後日本公害史論』. 岩波書店.

宮本憲一 (Miyamoto, K.) (2014b). 「日本の公害の歴史的教訓」 宮本憲一・淡路剛久編 『公害・

環境研究のパイオニアたち』. 岩波書店, 3-40.

宮本太郎 (Miyamoto, T.) (2006). 「福祉国家の再編と言説政治―新しい分析枠組」 宮本太郎編

『比較福祉政治―制度転換のアクターと戦略』. 早稲田大学出版会, 68-88. / Miyamoto, T.

(2006). The Restructuring of Welfare State and the Politics of Dialogue: A new analytical

framework. In Miyamoto, T. (ed.) *Comparative Welfare Politics: Actors and Strategies for Regime*

Transition. Tokyo: Waseda Daigaku Shuppanbu. 68-88. (in Japanese)

宮本太郎 (Miyamoto, T.) (2014c). 「地域社会をいかに支えるのか－生活保障の再編と地域包括ケ

ア」宮本太郎編著 『地域包括ケアと生活保障の再編－新しい「支え合い」システムを創

る』. 明石書店, 15-44.

御代川喜久夫 (Miyogawa, K.) (2002). 「水俣病と科学」 加藤哲郎・渡辺雅男編 『一橋大学国際

シンポジウム　20 世紀の夢と現実―戦争・文明・福祉』. 彩流社, 271-285.

向井清史 (Mukai, K.). (2015). 『ポスト福祉国家のサードセクター論―市民的公共圏の担い手とし

ての可能性』. ミネルヴァ書房.

村松岐夫 (Muramatsu, Y.) (1994). 『日本の行政―活動型官僚制の変貌』. 中央公論社.

村松岐夫・伊藤光利・辻中豊 (Muramatsu, Y. et al.) (2001). 『日本の政治』. 第 2 版, 有斐閣.

文京洙 (Mun, G.). 『新・韓国現代史』. 岩波書店.

森下明子 (Morishita, A.) (2015). 『天然資源をめぐる政治と暴力―現代インドネシアの地方政治』. 京都大学学術出版会.

八代尚宏 (Yashiro, N.) (2017). 『日本経済論・入門』. 新版, 有斐閣. / Yashiro, N. (2017). *Japanese Economy after the World War II.* 2ⁿᵈ edition, Tokyo: Yuhikaku. (in Japanese)

山内直人 (Yamauchi, N.) (1997). 『ノンプロフィット・エコノミー―NPO とフィランソロピーの経済学』. 日本評論社.

山内直人 (Yamauchi, N.) (2002). 『NPO の時代』. 大阪大学出版会.

山岡義典 (Yamaoka, Y.) (1999). 『時代が動くとき―社会の変革と NPO の可能性』. ぎょうせい. / Yamaoka, Y. (1999). *When the Time Changes: Social innovation and the potential of NPOs*. Tokyo: Gyosei. (in Japanese)

山岡義典 (Yamaoka, Y.) (2001). 「21 世紀制度改革―世間型社会から市民型社会へ。そのとき NPO の役割は」 山岡義典・早瀬昇・石川両一編 『NPO 非営利セクターの時代―多様な協働の可能性を探る』. ミネルヴァ書房, 7-47.

山岡義典 (Yamaoka, Y.) (2007). 「特定非営利活動促進法と公益法人制度改革関連 3 法の立法過程―特に立法への市民参加の視点から」小島武司編著 『日本法制の改革―立法と実務の最前線』. 中央大学出版部, 549-608.

俞可平 (Yu, K.) (2014). 「中国公民社会の制度的環境」 石井・緒形・鈴木編 前掲書. 102-154.

愈祖成 (Yu, Z.). (2016). 「中国における NPO セクターの現状と課題」『同志社政策科学研究』, 17(2), 53-67.

愈祖成 (Yu, Z.). (2017). 『現代中国の NPO セクターの展開―公共性の変容の視点から』. 京都: 山口書店. / Yu, K. (2017). *Development of the Modern Chinese NPO Sector*. Kyoto: Yamaguchi Shoten. (in Japanese)

油井大三郎 (Yui, D.) (2016). 『未完の占領改革―アメリカ知識人と捨てられた日本民主化構想（増補新装版）』. 東京大学出版会.

結城康博 (Yuuki, Y.) (2011). 『日本の介護システム―政策決定過程と現場ニーズの分析』. 岩波書店.

尹誠國 (Yeon, S.) (2012). 『韓国における地方分権改革の分析』. 公人の友社.

横浜勇樹 (Yokohama, Y.). (2012). 「中国都市部における草の根 NGO の地域福祉活動に関する研究」『高知学園短期大学紀要』, Vol. 42, 75-85.

米澤旦 (Yonezawa, H.) (2017). 『社会的企業への新しい見方―社会政策のなかのサードセクター』. 京都:ミネルヴァ書房.

羅一慶 (Ra, I.) (2015). 『ソーシャルビジネスの政策と実践』. 京都: 法律文化社.

李恩恵 (Lee, E.) (2012). 「韓国の社会的企業の現況と市民社会のイニシアティブ」 秋葉他編著. 前掲書. 121-164.

李暁東 (Li, X.) (2018a). 『現代中国の省察―「百姓」社会の視点から』. 国際書院. / Li, X. (2018a). *Reflections on Modern China: A perspective of "Bai Xing" society*. Tokyo: Kokusai Shoin. (in Japanese)

李妍焱 (Li, Y.) (2008). 「「知識分子」の役割」 李編 前掲書. 63-80.

李妍焱 (Li, Y.) (2018b). 『下から構築される中国―「中国的市民社会」のリアリティ』. 明石書店.

劉培峰 (Liu, P.). (2008). 「中国における草の根 NGO 台頭の社会的背景」 李編 前掲書. 21-33.

C. C. レイガン著、鹿又伸夫監訳 (Ragin, C. C.) (1993). 『社会科学における比較研究―質的分析と計量的分析の統合に向けて』. ミネルヴァ書房. / Ragin, C. C. (1993). *Comparative Method: Moving beyond qualitative and quantitative strategies*. Kyoto: Minerva Shobo. (Japanese translation)

労働政策研究・研修機構 (JILPT) (2004). 「NPO 法人における能力開発と雇用創出に関する調査」. 労働政策研究・研修機構.

労働政策研究・研修機構 (JILPT) (2015). 「NPO 法人の活動と働き方に関する調査」. 労働政策研究・研修機構.

労働政策研究・研修機構 (JILPT) (2016). 「NPO の就労に関する研究－恒常的成長と震災を期と

した変化を捉える」. 労働政策研究・研修機構.

渡辺孝・露木真也子 (Watanabe, T. and Tsuyuki, M.) (2009). 『社会起業家と社会イノベーション－

議論の国際的系譜と日本の課題』. ESRI Discussion Paper Series No. 215, 内閣府経済社会総

合研究所. / Watanabe, T. and Tsuyuki, M. (2009). *Social Entrepreneur and Social Innovation:*

Lineage of International Discussion and Challenges for Japan. ESRI Discussion Paper Series No.

215, Tokyo: Economic and Social Research Institute. (in Japanese)

Appendix: Case Analyses

Case Analysis: Non-Profit Organization (NPO), Japan

Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutionalization

Actor / Stage	Stage 1	Stage 2	Stage 3	Stage 4
Governments	- Governments were cautious about "anti-governmental" citizens' movements - 1972 Tokyo Metropolitan Government set a center for "Citizens' Activities" - Economic Planning Agency has researched on volunteer / nonprofit sectors	-	- MPs from different political parties supported the idea of providing legal status for nonprofit organizations - 1998 Law to Support Specified Non-profit Activities (NPO Law) enacted	- Government utilized NPOs (as well as other organizations) to outsource governmental services and facilities, including the service for the Long-term care insurance system. - NPO Law and tax system revised to increase benefit for NPOs
Businesses	- Business was cautious about "citizens' movement"	-	- Keidanren supported NPO legislation	- Corporate sector started to work with NPOs for their CSR programs (but not so major?)
Civil society	- "Volunteer" groups have been active since the 1970s in various fields - Since 1980s civil society groups have studied nonprofit / charity sectors in the US / UK	-	- Civil society leaders and networks worked to advocate to MPs and other stakeholders both in central and local levels	- NPO sector grew rapidly by the long-term elderly care insurance scheme and other public service outsourcing from local governments
(Note)	-	- 1995.1 Great Hanshin Earthquake accelerated the process of volunteer support / nonprofit organization legislation	- Through the NPO Law legislation processes, "public welfare by citizen [民間公益]" started to be accepted as a positive value	- 2009-2012 Democratic Party of Japan government tried to utilize NPOs and other social sector organizations for the "New Public" - NPOs became a "normal" thing for the society

Summary

- Since the 19th Century, "public benefit" was either done by or controlled by the government. "Citizen's Movement" was largely considered as an anti-government / business, marginal thing in post-war Japan.
- Civil society actors have conducted research / visit to other countries (mainly U.S. / U.K.) and created a vision since the 1980s.
- 1995 Great Hanshin Earthquake showed the capacity of volunteers to the society, and opened the "window" for policy change.
- Civil society leaders and bipartisan MPs worked together to legalize nonprofit organization ("NPO") using this opportunity.
- The legislation process, with actors from central and regional levels, quickly changed the perspective of the society.
- In local communities, local governments utilized NPOs for elderly care and other services (e.g. public facility management), and NPOs grew as a considerable sector (but also increased dependency on government).

Analysis / Narrative

(Issues)

- Since 19th Century non-governmental public benefit activities / organizations were under strong governmental control

- Volunteer organizations lacked legal status and had difficulty for professional management and winning trust and support from the society

(Goals / Desirable situation)

- Stop environmental pollution and health hazard, and to recover the damage caused by the pollution

- To have systemic framework to prevent future pollution

(Process of change)

- 1989 The end of Cold War (Fall of Berlin's Wall)

- 1992.10/11 Japan Networkers Forum ［日本ネットワーカーズ・フォーラム］held and discussed on nongovernmental public welfare activities and nonprofit organization

- 1993-4 NIRA Research project on Citizens' Public Benefit Activity Infrastructure Development [市民公益活動基盤整備に関する調査研究] conducted by a network of civil society leaders

- 1994 NPO/NPS Taskforce / Research Committees organized by different political parties (LDP, Japan Social Democratic Party, Sakigake, New Japan Party)

- 1994.11 C's established

- 1995.1.17 Great Hanshin Earthquake

- 1995.2 Inter-ministerial liaison committee on volunteer issues [ボランティア問題に関する関係省庁連絡会議] established -> 1995.11 the committee submits mid-term report to the PM office but the initiative stops by opposition from triparty MPs.

- 1995.2 Triparty NPO Project Team formed – 1995.9 draft laws from LDP, SDP, and Sakigake submitted

- 1995 C's (Matsubara) and other groups submit recommendations, requests, and draft laws – 1995.4 A network of key organizations formed

- 1995.11 Triparty MPs refuses Economic Planning Agency's plan and request for MPs-led legislation for NPOs –> Inter-ministerial liaison committee dissolved

- 1995.12 Triparty Project Team agrees on Citizens' Activity Promotion Law Draft (outline) [市民活動促進法案（骨子）]

- 1996 Symposia and forums organized at different parts of Japan

- 1996.4 LDP submits a draft Citizens' Activity Promotion Law -> Opposed by SDP and Sakigake, 1996.6 Triparty project gives up to consolidate a draft -> 1996.9 Triparty high-level negotiation agrees on the outline

- 1996.9 Democratic Party of Japan established

- 1996.11 Osaka NPO Center (Hayase) / Japan NPO Center (Yamaoka) established

- 1996.12 Triparty submits Draft Citizens' Activity Promotion Law to the Lower House

- 1997.2/3 DPJ and Communist Party of Japan submit respective draft laws -> 1996.5 DPJ / Triparty agreement

- 1997.6 Citizens' Activity Promotion Law passes the Lower House, sent to the Upper House

- 1997.10 Keidanren makes a statement to request swift passing of the NPO Law

- 1997.11 LDP at the Upper House requests to change the name of the Law -> 1997.12 Triparty agrees to change the name to Nonprofit Activity Promotion Law

- 1998.2 JDP, SDP, Sakigake, Minyuren, and Komeito agrees to co-submit the law, the name changed to Specific Nonprofit Activity Promotion Law

- 1998.3 The Law passes the Upper House -> Lower House (unanimously)

- 1998.12 The Law comes into effect

- 2001 NPO Law revised (Accredited-NPO)

- 2008 Revision of the Public Welfare Organizations – new Associations / Foundations (without tax benefit) statuses were created (partly overlapping with NPOs, but easier to set up)

- 2009.10 PM Hatoyama declared the "New Public Commons" as the vision for the country in his policy speech – 2010.6 New Public Commons Roundtable makes a Proposal and Government Action

- 2011.3. East Japan Great Earthquake / Tsunami – number of new organization chose the newly created the (non-taxation benefit) Foundation / Association statuses

- 2011.6 NPO Law / Tax Law revised

References

Kawato, Y., Pekkanen, R. J., and Yamamoto, H. (2011). State and Civil Society in Japan, In Gaunder, A. (ed.) *Routledge Handbook of Japanese Politics*. Abingdon: Routledge, 117-129.

Pekkanen, R. (2006). *Japan's Dual Civil Society: Members without advocates*. Stanford: Stanford University Press.

Tsujinaka, Y. (2003). From Developmentalism to Maturity: Japan's civil society organizations in comparative perspective. In Schwartz, F. and Pharr, S. J. (eds.) *The State of Civil Society in Japan*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 83-115.

柏木宏 (Kashiwagi, H.) (2008). 『NPOと政治―アドボカシーと社会変革の新たな担い手のために』. 明石書店.

小島廣光 (Kojima, H.) (2003). 『政策形成とNPO法―問題、政策、そして政治』. 有斐閣.

長島祐基 (Nagashima, Y.) (2016). 「都立多摩社会教育会館市民活動サービスコーナー資料とそのアーカイブズ化に関する考察」 『国文学研究資料館紀要　アーカイブズ研究篇』(12), 75-95.

原田峻 (Harada, S.) (2015). 「NPO法改正・新寄付税制の政策過程―唱道連合と政策志向的学習の変遷に着目して」『ノンプロフィット・レビュー』, 15(1), 1-12.

原田峻 (Harada, S.) (2017). 「NPO法制定過程における立法運動の組織間連携―分野内／分野間の連携に着目して」『ノンプロフィット・レビュー』, 17(2), 77-87.

山内直人 (Yamauchi, N.) (2002). 『NPOの時代』. 大阪大学出版会.

山岡義典 (Yamaoka, Y.) (1999). 『時代が動くとき―社会の変革とNPOの可能性』. ぎょうせい.

「NPO法（特定非営利活動促進法）制定10年の記録」年表、まちぽっとウェブサイト(in Japanese, http://npolaw-archive.jp/?page_id=21 Retrieved 22 Jun 2018)

Case Analysis: Environmental Pollution, Japan

Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutionalization

Actor / Stage	Stage 1	Stage 2	Stage 3	Stage 4
Governments	- 1958 2 laws on water pollution (without regulatory standard)	-	- Some local governments set up pollution related departments in early 1960s - 1963 Yokohama / 1967 Tokyo have reformist heads, and they set progressive regulations and agreement with businesses Local governments created bylaws and regulations ahead of the state and created agreements	- 1967 Basic Law for Environmental Pollution Control - 1967 Gov accepts that Minamata disease was caused by pollution 1970 "Pollution Parliament" passes 14 related laws - 1971 Environmental Agency established - 1973 Act on Compensation on Pollution-related Health Damage
Businesses	- (Businesses denied their responsibilities)	-	- Some businesses under the jurisdiction of reformist local governments made a deal with LGs to reduce pollutions	- (Big) businesses followed regulations, facing strong pressure from the society (and developed new technologies which led to a new "environmental industry")
Civil society	- Local protests happened but had little impact Environmental pollutions and health hazards were marginal issues for "local residents"	- 1963 Shizuoka public movement stopped developing petrochemical complex The collaboration model in Shizuoka became a model for other areas	- Public movements (taking Shizuoka as an example) spread to other parts of Japan - Local residents file cases for compensation since late 1960s	- Environmental Disruption became a national issue including urban areas (including Tokyo) - Anti-pollution movements developed to nature conservation and protection movements / nonprofits
(Note)	- Economic recovery and development was largely considered as the priority, and environment was given a small value	-	- A group of academics in Kogai Commission done research and an International Symposium on Environmental Disruption (1970)	- "Environmental Rights" are created and accepted through judiciary processes - Even in areas where pollution continued, stakeholders started to understand the pressure from the society - Pollution "exported" to other countries?

Summary

- Although environmental pollution and health hazard were continuing problems, because of the priority given to economic and industrial development, government could not stop the pollution. Protests in local areas were considered as "marginal" thing by farmers and fishers. The lack of scientific evidence (or the mainstream scientists' refusal to accept it) was also a problem.

- The 1963/1964 Shizuoka protest movement conducted their own scientific research and created a cooperation between different stakeholders (local teachers, scientists, journalists, etc.) and became a model of local movement by its success.

- In the 1960s / 1970s, some local governments (so-called "progressive municipalities" in Kanagawa, Tokyo, and Osaka) created their own pollution standards and enforcement mechanisms, and also dealt with local factories and businesses for "gentlemen's agreement" to reduce pollution.

- National Laws followed (starting from 1967 Basic Law for Environmental Pollution Control) and following the lawsuits which held companies responsible for the pollution and health damages, businesses largely followed the regulations (and even developed a new business / industry of anti-pollution equipment).

- Researchers, journalists, and lawyers developed the new idea of "environmental rights" through research and lawsuits, and it quickly became accepted as a social value.

Analysis / Narrative

(Issues)

- Post war Japan's focus on industrial development (including mining) caused a serious pollution and health hazard to thousands of people, and it became obvious after 1960s.

- There were no regulations / self-regulations from government / business sectors to effectively stop such pollution (There were bylaws in Tokyo / Osaka and other big cities to regulate industrial pollution, but lacked scientific standards and penalties).

(Goals / Desirable situation)

- Stop environmental pollution and health hazard, and to recover the damage caused by the pollution

- To have systemic framework to prevent future pollution

(Process of change)

- Ministry of Welfare tried to send Environmental Pollution Prevention Act to the diet in 1955/1957, but strong opposition from business associations prevented it

- 1958 「公共用水域の水質の保全に関する法律」、「工場排水等の規制に関する法律」 -but both laws could not set concrete regulatory standard and could not stop pollution

- 1958/59 A research group from Kumamoto University identified the organic mercury is the cause of Minamata disease. But MITI and the corporation did not accept it and no serious countermeasure was taken, and pollution continued.

- 1962 ばい煙の輩出の規制等に関する法律 (not an effective law with its loose standards and limitation of geographical areas)

- 1963-64 Public protest in Mishima / Shimizu, Shizuoka stopped the development, and it became an example for other areas. Grassroots movement by local residents in Minamata and other places played a big role to create the public opinion

- In 1960s, some local government heads supportive to environmental protection (often with support from opposition parties, called "progressive heads") were elected and they set stricter environmental regulations and policies (including convention with corporates) in their municipalities: 1963- Mayor Asukata of Yokohama, 1967- Governor Minobe of Tokyo, 1971- Governor Kuroda of Osaka, etc.)

- 1964 Yokohama City made the first agreement to reduce pollution with a new coal power plant built by Dengen Kaihatsu, after receiving requests from citizen ("Yokohama Model")

- 1967-69, local residents and victims filed suits with the court to recover the caused damage, and gradually won compensation

- 1967 Basic Law for Environmental Pollution Control (公害対策基本法) – first basic law on environmental protection among industrial countries

- 1968 Government recognizes Minamata disease as a pollution-related disease (12 years after the discovery of the disease)

- 1970 "Pollution Parliament" set / revised 14 related laws

- 1971 Environment Agency in national level has been set up

- 1973 Act on Compensation on Pollution-related Health Damage (公害健康被害補償法)

- "Environmental rights" were developed and widely accepted by these movements, and legal cases.

- Environment became an widely accepted value among the society (e.g. one of the popular areas for volunteering activities or the corporate CSR activities)

- Japanese companies went overseas and continued polluting there (Miyamoto, 2014: 575-576)

References

Tsuru, S. (1999). *The Political Economy of the Environment: The case of Japan*. London: The Athlone Press.

飯島伸子 (Iijima, N.) (2000). 『環境問題の社会史』. 有斐閣.

岡田一郎 (Okada, I.) (2016). 『革新自治体―熱狂と挫折に何を学ぶか』. 中公新書.

栢木清吾, 塚原東吾編著 (Kayanoki, S. and Tsukahara, T.) (eds.) (2015). 『持続可能な環境？：公害問題の歴史からわれわれは、何を学んだのか：三菱 UFJ 環境財団・神戸大学助成プロジェクト ESD 対話シンポジウム報告書』 神戸 STS 叢書シリーズ 12.

JICA (2004). 『日本の産業公害対策経験―開発途上国と価格、市場、クリーナープロダクションの観点から』. JICA.

都留重人 (Tsuru, S.) (2001). 『都留重人自伝―いくつもの岐路を回顧して』. 岩波書店.

宮本憲一 (2014). 『戦後日本公害史論』. 岩波書店.

Case Analysis: Community-Based Integrated Care, Japan

Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutionalization

Actor / Stage	Stage 1	Stage 2	Stage 3	Stage 4
Governments		- Wako city gov. started their own initiatives (cross-sectoral community care meeting, etc.) since 2003 - Ministry of Health, Labour and Welfare's 2003 Study Group proposes a shift to community-based care A few "best practices" at local level were quickly developed to a national policy, without much scaling or dissemination process	- Revision of related laws in National Parliaments (2005/2006) –> financial resource available from National Insurance Systems - Mr. Tonai from Wako city was stationed in Ministry of Welfare (2009-2011) - Local governments are mandated to develop their own system for community-based integrated care (though not all LGs are performing well)	- (MoHWL proposing for a new concept "Symbiosis Community") to make CBIC cross-sectoral, not only for elderly care
Businesses			Local governments and service providers did not find much benefit to implement CBIC without capacity and/or incentives	Service providers coming into CIC, reflecting the systems change (but not much)
Civil society	- Onomichi Medical Association developed their own cross-sectoral care model since 1994 - Other cases of grass-root community projects (supported by Nissei Foundation and others)	- Foundations such as Sawayaka Fukushi Foundation advocated for the change		- Service providers coming into CIC, reflecting the systems change (but not much)
(Note)	- Models introduced from UK and other European countries? (1990 UK NHS & Community Care Act)	- Dr. Katayama, Chair of Onomichi Medical Association was a member of the MoWLH Study Group. The SG Chair was Mr. Hotta, the President of Sawayaka Fukushi Foundation.	- Centralization of government power (to the Prime Minister's Office since the Koizumi administration) made such policy process possible	- People's mindset gradually changing (but not fully) from institutional-based care to home-based / community-based care?

Summary

- Japan's Long-term Elderly Care Insurance (started in 2000) faced a serious problem with financial and human resource sustainability issues, and the Ministry of Health, Welfare, and Labour developed the idea of community-based integrated care (CBIC), based on a few practices conducted in local communities / municipalities.
- Although the CBIC was quickly introduced in national scheme, but in (most of) local communities, it did not work as planned to coordinate different stakeholders and service providers, mainly due to the lack of incentives and professional capacities.
- Also as an ideal, CBIC is not widely accepted in the society and people are reluctant to "support" their neighbors as volunteers or associations.

Analysis / Narrative

(Issues)

- Japan's elderly care system was heavily dependent on institutional care since the start of Long-term Care Insurance System (介護保険制度) in 2000 (or even before). However, this is not sustainable in terms of finance and infrastructure / resources.

- Elderly often wishes to live in their house / community, but institutional care removed them from the community.

- Community- / home- based care is an alternative, but it received d a lot of resistance from the society, and from care industry (composed from both businesses and nonprofit organizations) who were used to institutional care.

- Medical care and social care were divided by sectoral / institutional boundary (doctors / nurses / elderly care workers).

(Goals / Desirable situation)

- Elderly care depends less on institutional care, and elderly can choose their place for living based on their own preference.

- Elderly care system becomes more sustainable, in terms of finance and human resource.

- The capacity and collaboration between care providers and community is strengthened through implementation of community-based care.

(Process of change)

- Ai Mitsugi Hospital the model has developed their model since 1970s to avoid bedridden patients (according to Dr. Yamaguchi, Mitsugu Hospital). Dr. Katayama, Chair of Onomichi Medical Association was a member of 2003 Elderly Care Study Group (高齢者介護研究会, Chair Mr. Hotta, Sawayaka Fukushi Zaidan) which developed a proposal "Elderly Care in 2015 (「2015 年の高齢者介護～高齢者の尊厳を支えるケアの確立に向けて～」)". A number of local practitioners (both from business and nonprofit sectors) were invited as guest speakers of the Study Group. These unofficial study groups often work as a channel to bring local experience to national ministries.

- 2005.6 Revised Elderly Care Insurance Act 介護保険法改正法案 / 2006.6 Medical Care System Reform Act 医療制度改革関連法案

- Mr. Touchi, who was the main person to develop cross-sectoral community-based care system in Wako city was stationed in National Government (Ministry of Health, Labour and Welfare) from 2009-2011, to develop a national plan for community-based integrated care.

- Over 7,000 CBIC Support Center were established, receiving LTCI funding but not functioning fully as expected.

- After the policy change, local governments were given some level of freedom to decide their service menus, but not all local governments are performing well, due to the lack of expertise and leaderships to coordinate relevant partners.

- Many businesses and nonprofit organizations came into the service after the change, and there are tough competition.

- People's mindset has not fully changed from the traditional "elderly goes to nursing home when they get old" way of thinking.

- The shift from institutional care to community / home-based integrated care was heavily dependent on the change in national policy and Medical / Elderly Care Insurance Systems, done by the change of related laws in 2006. But there were a few initiatives to provide the models in local levels (e.g. Mitsugi (now Onomichi) system (尾道方式) initiated by Medical Association (尾道市医師会), and Wako city model (和光モデル), developed by Wako city government (和光市役所)). However, the challenges are in the implementation stage, where local governments are tasked to manage the service system by collaborating with business / nonprofit service providers.

References

Estevez-Abe, M. (2008). *Welfare and Capitalism in Postwar Japan*. New York: Harvard University Press.

Sumii, H. and Sawada, Y. (eds.) *Achievements and Future Directions of the Long-Term Care Insurance System in Japan: Toward social "kaigo" security in the global longevity society*. Okayama: University Education Press.

川越雅弘 (Kawagoe, M.) (2008). 「我が国における地域包括ケアシステムの現状と課題」 『海外社会保障研究』 No.162, 4-15.

高齢者介護研究会 (Elderly Care Research Group) (2003). 「2015 年の高齢者介護～高齢者の尊厳を支えるケアの確立に向けて～」 http://www.mhlw.go.jp/topics/kaigo/kentou/15kourei/ (Retrieved 14th Mar. 2017)

高橋紘士編 (Takahashi, H.) (ed.) (2012). 『地域包括ケアシステム』. オーム社.

日本生命財団ウェブサイト「高齢社会助成」 http://www.nihonseimei-zaidan.or.jp/kourei/index.html (Retrieved 14th Mar. 2017)

三菱 UFJ リサーチ&コンサルティング (Mitsubishi UFJ Research and Consulting) (2010). 「地域包括ケア研究会 報告書」. 三菱 UFJ リサーチ&コンサルティング.

宮本太郎 (Miyamoto, T.) (2014). 「地域社会をいかに支えるのか－生活保障の再編と地域包括ケア」 宮本太郎編著 『地域包括ケアと生活保障の再編－新しい「支え合い」システムを創る』. 明石書店, 15-44.

結城康博 (Yuuki, Y.) (2011). 『日本の介護システム－政策決定過程と現場ニーズの分析』. 岩波書店.

Case Analysis: Welfare Reform and the Development of Social Organizations, China

	Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutionalization

Actor / Stage	Stage 1	Stage 2	Stage 3	Stage 4
Governments	-	- After the 1980s governmental organizations developed SOs (SOs grew from 5,000 in 1988 to 100,000 in 1992 – growing still after the Tiananmen?) - Gov. bodies establishing SOs (without registering, or using them as a financial / personnel loop-hole) - Gov. control strengthened after the Tiananmen, "dual registration" system introduced and "clearing and reorganizing" taken (1990s)	- Local governments implemented trials in their areas (2004 Shenzhen's direct registration, incubation programs) - Regulations for different SOs (associations, foundations, and PRNEUs) developed	- 2013 State Council - Gov. procurement of services from SOs - 2016 Charity Law
Businesses	-	- There is a "pause" during the 1990s	- Business, responding to the gov.'s guidance, setting up (non-public) foundations or donating after the 2004 Foundation Regulation	- Online platforms built by private IT businesses (Tencent, Alibaba, etc.) becomes a major tool for SOs fundraising, information disclosure, and public scrutiny
Civil society	- Intellectuals advocating for "civil society" and SOs	- Intellectuals organizing academic and professional associations -	- "Grass-root" NGOs and other SOs (like PRNEUs) flourished after 1995 Beijing Women's Conference - PRNEUs were introduced after 1998 mainly to provide social services - 2008 Sichuan Earthquake made donation / volunteering popular to public - 2009 Guangdong Harmony Foundation (first community foundation) -	- SOs improving transparency after several major scandals - Online donation increased greatly - SOs (including PRNEUs) expand
(Note)	- 1978 Start of Reform and Opening dismantled socialist welfare system, and also encouraged the role of SOs	- After 1989 Tiananmen Incident SOs were under strong control from the government, so many SOs operated as an enterprise or without any registration	- Deepening economic reforms increasing inequality and social needs - "Harmonious Society" since the mid-2000s	- The amount of donations given to SOs (especially through online platforms) are on increase

Summary

- Under the Socialist regime, welfare was provided through working units and social organizations were heavily controlled by the Party-state system.
- After the "Reform and Opening" in the 1980s, social welfare was transferred to national and local governments, but they lacked capacity to provide different services.
- In the 1980s the first wave of newly established associations and foundations came, but stopped after the political turmoil and governmental tightening of regulations.
- Local governments (Shanghai, Guangzhou, and others) started using social organizations for service delivery and supported the development of SOs.
- Donations (including online platforms) for SOs are prospering in China. Businesses also support SOs through setting up foundations.
- Researchers and intellectuals continued to develop different concepts and ideas acceptable for the Party-government system.
- Party-government system both encourages and controls SOs through different legislation and other means.

Analysis / Narrative

(Issues)

- After the Reform and Opening policy since 1980s, socialist welfare systems based on work "units" (state-owned enterprises and people's commune) were dissolved and there were / are not enough social safety net to support the vulnerable groups in increasingly unequal society (laid-off workers, elderly, handicapped, migrant workers in big cities, etc.). Local governments and local communities are not having enough capacity / resource to support these groups.

- Spaces and resources for communal support were limited

(Goals / Desirable situation)

- SOs can have capacity and resource to cover fundamental needs within the society

- SOs can change the governance system to utilize resource effectively and to make governments more accountable to people

(Process of change)

- Under the PRC Regime (1950 Social Organizations Registration Provisionary Regulations ［社会団体登記暫行弁法］), only 8 People's Organizations were allowed

- After the start of Reform and Opening, associations and foundations start to flourish, often created by governmental bodies. SOs grew from 5,000 in 1988 to 80,000 in 1991, 100,000 in 1992

- Some of the first foundations: 1982 Soong Ching Ling Foundation

- 1978 Start of Reform and Opening, Establishment of Ministry of Civil Affairs (previous responsible Ministry of Home Affairs were dissolved in 1969 during the Great Cultural Revolution)

- The rise of SOs (1978-19992): "Associational Revolution" (Wang 2011:14) The number of SOs registered reached from 5,000 in 1988 to 154,500 in 1992. However these SOs were mostly semi-gov. associations, "organized top-down"

- 1981/82 Earliest foundations (1981 China Children and Teenager's Fund, 1982 China Soong Ching Ling Foundation)

- 1988.9.27 Measures on Foundation Administration「基金会管理弁法」 in effect

- 1989.6.4 Tiananmen Incident

- Government issued 1989.10 Revised Social Organizations Registration Regulations 「社会団体登記管理条例」 after the Tiananmen Incident, which set the principle of dual registration and allowing only one organization for one area per an administrative unit

- "Clearing and Organizations" ［清理整頓］ in 1990, 1993, 1997, 1999 (especially for SOs operating for-profit activities) – The low point of SOs was 1998.

- 1995 Beijing Women's NGO Conference – a new wave of "grassroot" NGOs coming from local service groups based in communities – many of the registered as a company ［工商］ or non-registered

- 1998 revised SORR 「社会団体登記管理条例」 sets detailed requirements for SOs establishment, including dual registration system and "only one organization for one issue / one administrative unit" principle

- 1998 「民弁非企業単位登記管理暫行条例」, PRNEUs also had to be registered under dual registration / only one organization for one unit systems, growing from 6,000 in 1999 to 22,000 in 2012.

- 1999 「公益事業寄贈法」 in effect

- Mid-2000s "Harmonious Society" ［和諧社会］ becomes a target set by Hu-Won leaderships

- 2004 「基金会管理条例」, sets detailed requirements and dual registration rule. Businesses and wealthy individuals setting up foundations (non-public foundations). 7 in 1981,189 in 1991, but 2,961 in 2012 (now over 6,000?)

- Local governments started reforms on dual registration ahead of central government (2004 Shenzhen, 2008 Beijing) and relaxing one organization per issue / administrative area policy (2008 Shanghai, 2009 Guangdong) (Huang 2014:98)

- 2008 Central government issued "SO reform and innovation observation areas" and set Shanghai, Shenzhen, Yunnan, Tsingtao, and Xinjiang Uighur as observation areas (Huang 2014:95)

- 2012 全人代「政府機構改革」, clarifies the goal to raise SOs to provide social services

- 2014 Premier Li announces the new slogan of "Social Governance" and sets SOs as a major contributor

- 2016 The Charity Law 「慈善法」 in effect

References

Leung, J. C. B. and Xu, Y. B. (2010). The Emergence of Social Assistance in China. In Midgley, J. and Tang, K.-L. (eds.) *Social Policy and Poverty in East Asia: The role of social security*. Abingdon: Routledge, 47-65.

Wang, M. (2011). "The Development of Civil Organizations and the Road to Civil Society in China", in Wang, M. (ed.) *Emerging Civil Society in China*, 1978-2008. London / Boston: Brill, 1-57.

Zhao, X. (2001). An Analysis of Unofficial Social Organizations in China: Their emergence and growth. *The Nonprofit Review*, 1(2), 133-142.

阿古智子 (Ako, T.) (2012). 「中国の「公民社会」と民主化の行方:曲折するソーシャルメディアと政治制度改革の関係」『国際政治』, 169 号, 45-59.

黄媚 (Huang, M.) (2014). 「制度」, 辻中豊・李景鵬・小嶋華津子編. (2014). 『現代中国の市民社会・利益団体—比較の中の中国』. 85-109.

郭莉莉 (Guo, L.) (2017). 『日中の少子高齢化と福祉レジーム—育児支援と高齢者扶養・介護』. 北海道大学出版会.

鈴木賢 (Suzuki, K.) (2014). 「権力に従順な中国的「市民社会」の法的構造」 石井知章・緒形康・鈴木賢編 『現代中国と市民社会—普遍的《近代》の可能性』. 勉誠出版, 536-565.

趙秀梅 (Zhao, X.) (2010). 「都市部基層政府と NGO の連携—「社区」における出稼ぎ労働者 NGO 調査から」 菱田雅晴編著 『中国 基層からのガバナンス』. 法政大学出版局, 211-234.

辻中豊・小嶋華津子 (Tsujinaka, Y. and Kojima, N.) (2014). 「序言」, 辻中豊・李景鵬・小嶋華津子編著 (2014). 『現代中国の市民社会・利益団体—比較の中の中国—』. 木鐸社, 35-50.

愈祖成 (Yu, Z.). (2016). 「中国における NPO セクターの現状と課題」『同志社政策科学研究』, 17(2), 53-67.

Case Analysis: Social Economy, South Korea

Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutionalization

Actor / Stage	Stage 1	Stage 2	Stage 3	Stage 4
Governments	-	- 1999 National Basic Livelihood Security Act -> 2000 Self-help Program (under jurisdiction of Ministry of Welfare) - Social employment program run by Ministry of Employment and Labor (together with civil society)	- 2006 Social Enterprise Promotion Act (under jurisdiction of Ministry of Labor) - Other ministries and local governments developed their own social economy organization schemes and programs MoEL-led SE scheme not creating active innovations	- 2013 Basic Law on Cooperatives "Progressive" local government heads who won 2010 local elections - 2011 Park Won-soon elected as the mayor of Seoul Metropolitan Government
Businesses	-	- Various "prototypes" created by civil society and ministries	-	- Big businesses (SK) coming into social enterprise sector in the 2010s? Proliferation of schemes creating spaces
Civil society	- "Alternative" economy idea from social movements (cooperatives, mutual groups) since 1970s	- 1990s Sungmisan Maul starts community activities - 2000- Self-help Program (as cooperatives, with involvement of civil society organizations) - 2000 Dr. Hwang of KLI introduces the concept of social enterprise in an international symposium (from European experience) - Park Won-soon starts successful social enterprise (Beautiful Store 2002) - 2003 Social employment program	- Some of the self-help program organization shifted to social enterprise -	- Cooperatives and other forms of social economy organizations flourished nationally, and locally (e.g. Seoul Metropolitan Area)
(Note)	-	- After the 1997 financial crisis and structural adjustment unemployment and "working poor" increased and became a major issue - Presidents Kim Dae-jung and Roh Moo-hyung had civil society background and asked for participative government - Dr. Hwang and civil society practitioners joined the MoEL task force to prepare the draft social enterprise law	-	-

Summary
- Under South Korea's military rule, associations and cooperatives were under governmental control.
- Mutual help / community movement were marginalized from the mainstream politics or business as a "leftist" movement in bipartisan politics between the so-called "conservative" and "progressive" camps.
- After two "progressive" presidents Kim Dae-jung and Rho Moo-hyung, government started to introduce welfare systems with universal coverage but the benefit was low.
- Asian Financial Crisis and so-called "IMF Situation" gave serious shock to the society and bipartisan agreement was made to support "social economy" to link welfare and employment.
- After some trials, Ministry of Employment and Labour has introduced its own "Social Enterprise" scheme, but it was used mainly to create employment by governmental subsidies and turned out to be inactive.
- Creation of different legal entities under ministries and local governments, especially cooperatives helped civil society to choose a scheme fit for their purpose.
- Some local governments, including Seoul Metropolitan Government led by Mayor Park Won-soon, are creating supporting environments and having more success.

Analysis / Narrative

(Issues)

- South Korean economy was polarized by conglomerates (*chaebols*) and big businesses

- Inequality and poverty especially for the elderly, unemployed youth and "working poor" became serious after 1998 financial crisis and structural adjustment

- Bipartisan politics could not find solutions that could

(Goals / Desirable situation)

- Social economy organizations provide decent jobs for vulnerable groups and also necessary social services

- The scale of social economy grows to compliment mainstream industries and economy

(Process of change)

- 1960s-1980s Military governments controlled agricultural, forestry, and fishery cooperatives, credit unions, and Saemaul organizations

- 1970s- Social movements established consumer cooperatives and co-working groups

- 1999 Kim Dae-jung administration passed the National Basic Livelihood Security Act, and "Self-reliance" program for the poor started in 2000, under the jurisdiction of MoHW and by support of civil society organizations.

- 2000 Dr. Hwang of KLI presents the concept of SE (from European example) in an international symposium -> missions sent to Europe and the US

- 2003 "Social employment" program for non-poor groups starts, under the jurisdiction of MoEL, and with NGOs

- 2004 Special Law for Decentralization

- 2006 Social Enterprises Promotion Act enacted – MoEL in charge of certification

- 2010.8 Preparatory social enterprise schemes which local governments can approve PSEs – all Regions set their own bylaw to set the standard

- 2010.12 Social Enterprise Promotion Institute established

- 2011.6 National Employment Strategic Committee officially approves ministries to select PSEs (setting up Startup Fund, legalizing priority purchase from SEs, compensation mechanisms, etc.)

- 2011 Park Won-soon elected as the mayor of Seoul Metropolitan Government

- 2011 (enacted in 2012) Framework Act on Cooperatives – the number of cooperatives reaches 8,000 in the first three years

References

Global Social Economy Forum. (2016). *Status of Social Economy Development in Seoul: A case study of Seoul*. Seoul: GSEF.

Hwang, D. S., Jang, W., Park, J. S. and Kim, S. (2016). "Social Enterprise in South Korea", *ICSEM Working Papers*, No. 35, Liege: The International Comparative Social Enterprise Models (ICSEM) Project.

Jang, J. (2017). The Development of Social Economy in South Korea: Focusing on the role of the state and civil society. *Voluntas* 28(6), 2592-2613.

磯崎典代 (Isozaki, N.) (2004). 「体制変動と市民社会のネットワーク」 辻中豊・廉載鎬編著 『現代韓国の市民社会・利益団体—日韓比較による体制移行の研究』. 木鐸社, 51-83.

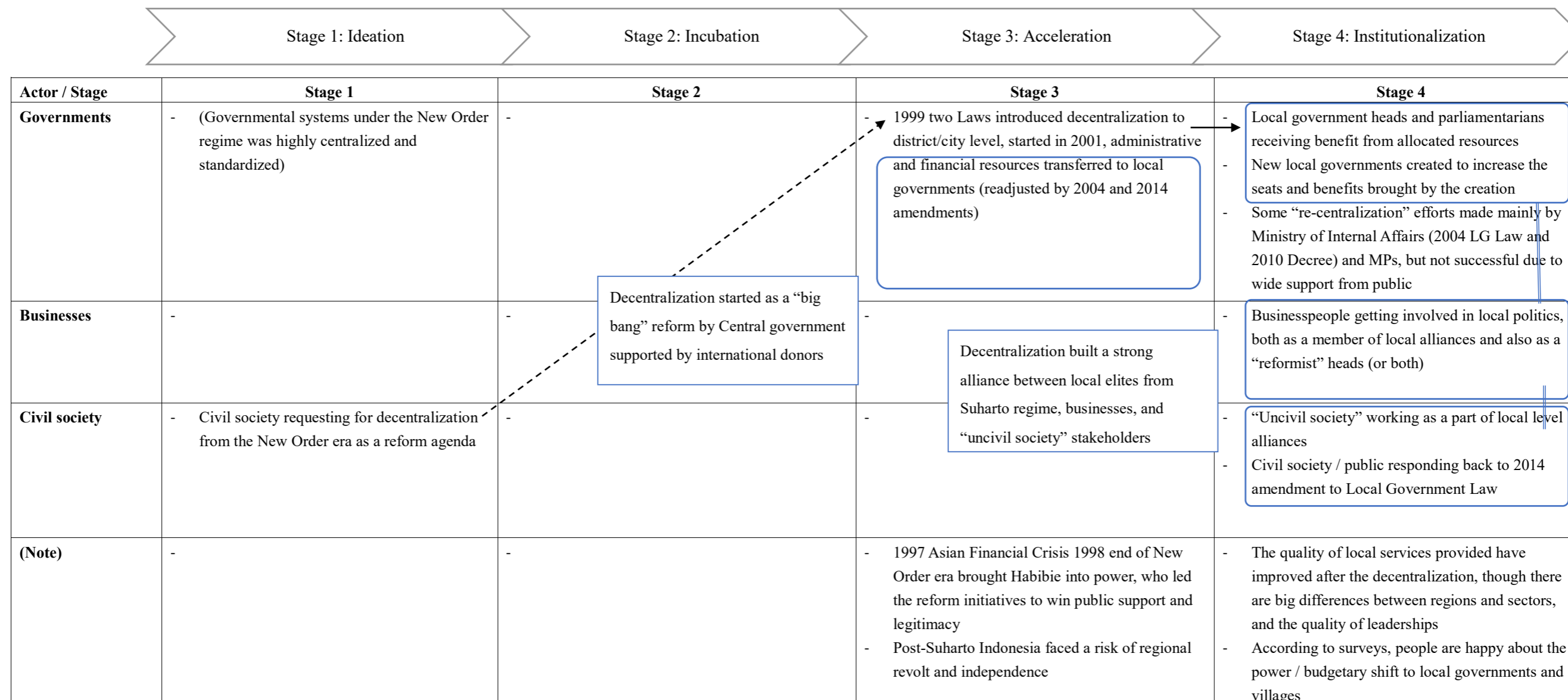大西裕 (Onishi, Y.) (2014). 『先進国・韓国の憂鬱—少子高齢化・経済格差、グローバル化』. 中央公論新社.

金氣興 (Kim, K.) (2015). 「韓国における社会的企業の展開」. 池本幸生・松井範惇編著 (2015). 『連帯経済とソーシャル・ビジネス—貧困削減、富の再分配のためのケイパビリティ・アプローチ』. 明石書店, 185-207.

趙昌鉉 (Cho, C.) 著, 阪堂博之・阪堂千津子訳 (2007). 『現代韓国の地方自治』. 法政大学出版局.

羅一慶 (Ra, I.) (2015.) 『ソーシャルビジネスの政策と実践』. 法律文化社.

李恩恵 (Lee, E.) (2012). 「韓国の社会的企業の現況と市民社会のイニシアティブ」, 秋葉武・川瀬俊治・菊地謙・桔川純子・広石拓司・文京洙編著 『危機の時代の市民活動—日韓「社会的企業」最前線』. 東方出版, 121-164.

Case Analysis: Governmental Decentralization, Indonesia

Stage 1: Ideation	Stage 2: Incubation	Stage 3: Acceleration	Stage 4: Institutionalization

Actor / Stage	Stage 1	Stage 2	Stage 3	Stage 4
Governments	- (Governmental systems under the New Order regime was highly centralized and standardized)	-	- 1999 two Laws introduced decentralization to district/city level, started in 2001, administrative and financial resources transferred to local governments (readjusted by 2004 and 2014 amendments)	- Local government heads and parliamentarians receiving benefit from allocated resources - New local governments created to increase the seats and benefits brought by the creation - Some "re-centralization" efforts made mainly by Ministry of Internal Affairs (2004 LG Law and 2010 Decree) and MPs, but not successful due to wide support from public
Businesses	-	-	-	- Businesspeople getting involved in local politics, both as a member of local alliances and also as a "reformist" heads (or both)
Civil society	- Civil society requesting for decentralization from the New Order era as a reform agenda	-	-	- "Uncivil society" working as a part of local level alliances - Civil society / public responding back to 2014 amendment to Local Government Law
(Note)	-	-	- 1997 Asian Financial Crisis 1998 end of New Order era brought Habibie into power, who led the reform initiatives to win public support and legitimacy - Post-Suharto Indonesia faced a risk of regional revolt and independence	- The quality of local services provided have improved after the decentralization, though there are big differences between regions and sectors, and the quality of leaderships - According to surveys, people are happy about the power / budgetary shift to local governments and villages

Decentralization started as a "big bang" reform by Central government supported by international donors

Decentralization built a strong alliance between local elites from Suharto regime, businesses, and "uncivil society" stakeholders

220

Summary

- The governmental decentralization happened as a "Big Bang" process by the central government, supported by international donors – to deal with confusion and the risk of regional separation after the fall of the New Order (Suharto) government.
- By 1999 Laws, considerable amount of governmental funding / power / human resource was transferred from the central to local levels, especially to the district / city level. Local government heads are elected directly by the constituency, and 2014 Village Law gave more power / funding to villages.
- The quality of governmental services have improved, though there are a big differences between regions and local leaderships.
- Although there were some efforts to re-centralize the authority to central or provincial levels, decentralization is basically accepted and embedded in the society, partly due to the alliances of local elites (politicians, businesses, and "uncivil society".

Analysis / Narrative

(Issues)

- After the Asian Financial Crisis (1997-) and the fall of Suharto regime, Indonesia was facing the risk of "Balkanization", by regions requesting for independence (East Timor, Aceh, Iryan Jaya, etc.)

- Local governments were weak and had no accountability to people during the New Order era

(Goals / Desirable situation)

- Republic of Indonesia to maintain unity without violence

- Level of public service provision improved at the local level

- Governments having more accountability to people

(Process of change)

- Local government was subordinate to central government under the New Order regime (1974 Local Governments Law, 1979 Desa Administration Law), and lacked personnel and funding

- 1998 Suharto resigns (the end of New Order regime that continued for 32 year), and Vice President Habibie becomes the President – starts democratic / decentralization reforms to win legitimacy

- 1998 National Council Resolution No. 15 approves the principle of decentralization

- 1999 Law No. 22 and Law No. 25 passed, implemented from 2001

- 2004 Law No. 32/2004 on Regional Government and Law No. 33/2004 on Intergovernmental Fiscal Balance revised two laws in 1999 – direct election of local government heads, direct service provision by central government (reverse of decentralization, or re-centralization), stronger involvement from central and provincial governments, approval of local budgets, taxes and fees, and planning

- 2005 Local government heads to be directly elected

- 2010 Decree No. 19 by Ministry of Internal Affairs

- 2014 Law No. 23 on Local Governments – cancellation of direct election of local government heads, but ceased after public protests and presidential decree

- 2014 Law No.6 /2014 on Village transfers village fund to village

References

Buehler, M. (2010). "Decentralisation and Local Democracy in Indonesia: The marginalization of the public sphere" in Aspinall, E. and Mietzner, M. (eds.) (2010). *Problems of Democratisation in Indonesia: Elections, institutions and society*. Singapore: ISEAS.

Hadiz, V. (2010). *Localising Power in Post Authoritarian Indonesia: A Southeast Asia perspective*. Stanford: Stanford University Press.

Ostwald, K., Tajima, Y. and Samphantharak, K. (2016). "Indonesia's Decentralization Experiment: Motivations, successes, and unintended consequences", *Journal of Southeast Asian Economics* 33(2), pp. 139-156.

USAID (2009). *Decentralization 2009: Stock taking on Indonesia's recent decentralization reforms Summary Report*. Washington DC: USAID.

岡本正明 (Okamoto, M.). (2012). 「逆コースを歩むインドネシアの地方自治」 船津鶴代・永井史男編 『変わりゆく東南アジアの地方自治』. アジ研選書 28, アジア経済研究所, 27-66.

岡本正明 (Okamoto, M.) (2015). 『暴力と適応の政治学—インドネシア民主化と地方政治の安定』. 京都大学学術出版会.

島上宗子 (Shimagami, M.). (2015). 「インドネシア分権化時代の村落改革—「村落自治」をめぐる理念と現実」 船津・永井編 前掲書, 67-104.

白石隆 (Shiraishi, T.) (2006). 『新版 インドネシア』. NTT 出版.

本名純 (Honna, J.) (2013). 『民主化のパラドックス—インドネシアにみるアジア政治の深層』. 岩波書店.